No. 10059

United States

Circuit Court of Appeals

For the Ninth Circuit.

EDNA W. BALLARD and DONALD BALLARD,
Appellants,

vs.

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,
Appellee.

Transcript of Record

In Four Volumes

VOLUME II

Pages 487 to 981

Upon Appeal from the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of California, Central Division.

PARKER PRINTING COMPANY, 545 SANSOME STREET, SAN FRANCISCO

VIRGINIA LaFERRERA

was called as a witness by the Government and testified as follows:

I live in Los Angeles. I was a member of the Ballard staff. I first attended a class of the Ballard movement in May of 1935 in San Fraicisco. Thereafter, I attended all San Francisco and Los Angeles classes. In 1936, I began to play the organ for the San Francisco class and thereafter played at the Los Angeles classes. (Tr. Vol. 10, p. 1342.)

In the spring of 1936, during the Pan Pacific class, I talked to Mrs. Ballard about reading rooms. She stated the purpose of reading rooms was to introduce the work to more people. She said that every reading room was separate and whoever operated one took the responsibility financially of conducting it. Thereafter, I opened a reading room in San Francisco. I purchased the books for use at the reading room from the Sindelar Studios.

In August of 1935 the Ballards asked me to play the organ at the Seattle class, which I did, and thereafter for almost two years I traveled to various parts of the country with the Ballards. Shortly after I started the Ballards told me that the Great Divine Director desired that I become a member of the staff, which I did. The Ballards told me on different occasions that I had been prepared by Saint Germain to perform the duties in a musical way for the activity. The Ballards told me and other staff members that our position as staff members was the most desired thing in the world, that

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

as such, we were held under Saint Germain's radiation and that Saint Germain was constantly doing special work on us, mentally and physically, which made us entirely different from other people of the outer world. In June of 1939, my husband handed me a letter on Biltmore Hotel stationery with the typewritten signature "Saint Germain." Upon receiving it, I terminated my affiliation with the staff. [200]

Said letter was introduced in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT NO. 126,

and was read to the jury by Mr. Lazarus as follows:

"The Biltmore Hotel
"Los Angeles, Calif.
"June 22, 1939.

"Virginia LaFerrera:

"After Infinite Patience, giving you every opportunity to be saved from your own destruction, I am compelled to dismiss you from any further association with the Staff or This Work, in the Groups, classes or otherwise.

"The vicious falsehoods you have spread concerning these Messengers, This Work and Myself are unparalleled. Now then, you must reap the full force of your own falsehood and destruction sent out!

"Your stubborn viciousness has caused you to fail utterly.

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

"May the Light of your 'Mighty I AM Presence' some day draw you back into Itself.
"SAINT GERMAIN."

The Witness: While traveling with the Ballards and playing the organ, writing songs and preparing incidental movement music for the activity, my expenses were paid and usually after conclusion of a class we (staff members) were given an envelope containing a love gift, anywhere from $20 to $100. My clothing was usually given to me by friends. At these various classes, tables were set up containing articles for sale—books, records, song sheets, pictures of ascended masters, charts, magazines and flags. The stock was carried from one class to another, At first, Mrs. Mundy was in charge of this part of the work, but later Mr. Vonderhoya assisted her. [201]

In the late summer of 1937, at Cheyenne, Wyoming, Mr. Ballard was feeling so badly that we couldn't start our day's travel. He told me he had a sick headache. I suggested alka-seltzer. He said he would be grateful if I would get it for him. I did and he drank it and then stated that he felt much better so that we could start out.

In January of 1939, at Yosemite, Mrs. Ballard told me she had a badly ulcerated throat. She didn't speak above a whisper for eight days. She said that she had been consuming the discord of individuals around to save them from suffering.

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

During my association with the Ballards I have heard the Ballards describe themselves as being messengers and that messengers were distinct from ordinary mortals. The statement contained in the December, 1939 issue of "The Voice," Government's Exhibit No. 56, at page 15, is similar to the statements that I heard the Ballards make.

Exception No. 48

Over the objection of defendants, that the witness was being interrogated on a subject not referred to, averred or charged in the indictment, the witness was allowed to testify that on many occasions Mrs. Ballard had stated that the only reason she had for wearing jewelry, especially large jewels, was that they carried a powerful healing radiation and that she used them in that work.

The Witness: In 1938 Mr. Ballard said that the yellow diamond that he was wearing was from the Yellowstone diamond mines, which were supposed to be located under Yellowstone Park.

I have read "Unveiled Mysteries," that portion of Government's Exhibit No. 80, page 111, the chapter entitled "Mysteries of the Yellowstone," relating to a golden diamond mine in Yellowstone Park. (Mr. Lazarus thereupon read from said page and from pages 112 and 113.) [202]

I wrote the songs, "Light of My Heart," "Lotus My Love" and "The Ascended Master Youth of America." I did not tell the Ballards that these pieces were filled with a healing power.

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

The Government read from Government's Exhibit 39, July 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, pages 35 and 36, which referred to these three songs.

I wrote the songs, "Rainbow Rays" and "Rose of Light." I recall no conversation with Mr. Ballard regarding the healing effect of these songs.

The Government read from the November, 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, Exhibit 43, page 48, dealing with these two songs.

I did not receive any compensation or royalty for these songs. I also worked on songs called "World Victorious" and "The Voice of the Presence." I had no conversation with Mr. Ballard about these songs releasing mankind of distress or about their healing power.

The Government read from Government's Exhibit 49, the May, 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 50.

I wrote most of the music for a song named, "Call to Light." This was in 1938. When I started to work on the music, Mr. Ballard was present and we talked the song over. After I finished it, I gave it to Mr. Ballard. About a week later, Mrs. Rogers sang it before a Chicago class. At that time, Mr. Ballard stated from the platform that while he was playing the song to me to take down, the Goddess of Light stood before us in the room giving the melody to him, giving the song to him to give to me. I did not observe the Goddess of Light on

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

the occasions referred to, nor did Mr. Ballard mention it. That music was not dictated to the, best of my knowledge by any ascended master.

A copy of the song, "Call to Light" was introduced in evidence as Government's Exhibit 127.

[203]

I believe it was in the year 1938 that I met defendant Paul Stickell. I attended some of his classes and as I recall, love gifts were collected at his classes. The publications and paraphernalia put out by the Saint Germain Press were sold at Mr. Stickell's classes. In the fall of 1938 Mr. Stickell told me he was going from Seattle to Los Angeles to attend a Shrine class at Christmas time and I asked him if he would stop in San Francisco and speak to the students in San Francisco. He said he didn't believe it would be possible. Later he came to our room in the hotel and said he wanted to explain why he would not stop in San Francisco, and stated that the last time he addressed a class there that he had only received $175 for seven or eight days from the love gifts and he thought he hadn't received all the love gifts that had been given to him, and asked that I investigate and straighten it out, as he would like to return to San Francisco under more favorable conditions. He said that these lectures had been given by him in the I Am reading room. A charge is never made to visiting lecturers. After I joined the staff of the movement, we would have staff meetings almost every night after regular classes. We would go to Mrs.

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

Ballard's hotel apartment and after all staff members had arrived, we would stand in a circle, usually a man and woman alternating, sometimes we would hold hands, and Mr. or Mrs. Ballard would give different decrees, sometimes for almost an hour, and we were supposed to silently repeat those decrees and give our energy to them. The decrees were for finances, for producing a million dollars into the hands and use of the Ballards, for world-wide radio hook-up, and for reading rooms to be established all over the world. The dictations were received during the staff meetings while all of us were sitting around the room. The blinds were drawn, the windows and doors locked, and we were asked to speak in low tones. Mr. Ballard [204] would sit in a chair and say that Saint Germain wished to speak to us or that the Great Divine Director or one of the ascended masters would wish to speak, and then through Mr. Ballard's own mouth would come the dictations. I never saw Saint Germain or the Great Divine Director during any of these staff meetings.

Thereupon Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit 11 at page 16.

In the latter part of August or September, 1937, I accompanied Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, Donald, and the staff to the Royal Teton Mountains. On this occasion, we did not have occasion to go down about 2,000 feet from the top of the mountains to the great council hall (referred to in Government's Ex-

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

hibit 11, the March, 1936 issue of "The Voice," at page 16). The Ballards did not tell me on that trip that they had gone to this great council hall, but on other occasions they told me that they had. I was with the Ballards on this trip to the Teton Mountains the entire time of the trip.

Exception No. 49

Over the objection of defendants, on the ground of hearsay, the witness testified that in the last of 1937 that Mr. Ballard had told her that when she was asked by students as to whether she had seen Saint Germain, that she should simply reply that she was not permitted to discuss it, that she did not know whether Mrs. Ballard was present or not. Exception was taken.

I followed such instruction until shortly before I left the Ballards' staff and activity. Just prior to the time I left, at a staff meeting the Ballards said that there were some of the staff who were disloyal and that if Saint Germain felt that he had to dismiss them from the staff that they wouldn't live six weeks in the outer world, and then both Mr. and Mrs. Ballard said that if we were dismissed from the staff [205] we would rise in agony and go through the second death. After I left the staff I was in a reasonably good state of health. (Tr. Vol. 10, p. 1393.) [206]

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

Cross Examination

During the entire time that I was in the I Am movement, I was sincere. I believed in the principles that were first set forth. There were things that were probably brought in later that I hadn't known when I first went into it. I don't know that I could say what they were specifically, but if given a little time to think I probably could. If I think of them during my cross examination I will express them. While I had faith in the principles of the work, I am afraid I didn't have faith in the Ballards during the whole time I was in the movement. Shortly after I became engaged in the work, little things arose that would bring doubt in my mind as to their sincerity. From time to time I asked questions of the Ballards about things I couldn't understand and was told that I wasn't to entertain such questions. I lost faith in the Ballards during the Chicago class at the time Mrs. Bliss left the activity. She was and is a good friend of mine. I can't say that her leaving the movement influenced me, but it showed me many things that I thought were one way, weren't.

Sometimes in the staff dictations, Mr. Ballard would talk two and a half hours; sometimes, only a half hour. He did not talk in these dictations which were supposed to be coming from the ascended master, through himself as a mouthpiece, about money, radio hook-ups and reading rooms, except as kind of a ceremony. That wasn't part of

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

the staff dictation. The staff dictations were separate from the other meetings at which the money, radio hook-up, et cetera, were discussed. These staff meetings without dictations continued for about a year after I became a staff member. Usually Mr. Ballard spoke, but sometimes he would say, "Mama, I am tired, will you do it tonight?"

Of course, there were many more decrees and much more of a ritual than I have outlined. There was a pure gold chalice [207] that was placed in the center of the circle in which we stood. In it were placed gold coins and trinkets of gold that were donated by various members of the staff and on top of it several sheets of paper. On these papers were names of Max Gysi and Harry Sieber who had left the work, and different ones who were no longer in the Light, and one of the decrees was that they ask Saint Germain and the host of ascended masters to blast from their carcasses these individuals from the face of the earth. They would bless the coming class, bless the hall and charge it with the radiations of the ascended masters and to see that it was filled to capacity and see that the work expanded to where there weren't halls big enough to hold them. They asked that the people be blessed. They asked that a million dollars be released tax-free into the hands and use of the messengers.

I did not attend in any facetious manner. I felt it was a privilege to attend. I felt a reverential at-

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

titude. During this entire period I tried not to exercise my own opinion at all. In any ordinary affairs of my life that were at all important, I consulted the Ballards.

At first, I thought the ritual rather odd, but got more or less used to it. That routine lasted for less than a year. No reason was given for changing the routine. At the staff meeting at which dictations were given, members of the staff would sometimes interrupt to ask Saint Germain questions. Mrs. Ballard would ask Saint Germain questions. I asked a few. The answers were my law. Sometimes the staff members would ask Saint Germain about former embodiments and he would tell us all who were in a former embodiment. I don't think it occurred to me to inquire in my mind as to whether I believed these statements or not. Some of them seemed pretty fantastic. I guess I was completely in a daze. I remember what went on, but I was certainly influenced in my mentality. [208]

I was first interviewed by the Post Office Department in the Spring of 1940. They contacted me. I related to Mr. Callahan my experiences. Whether he took them down in writing, I don't recall. My memory was better then than now. I have heard the Ballards say that if they felt a physician was required; until they were able to aid themselves, that it was best to have a doctor's assistance. I didn't think that applied to the Ballards.

I heard in the discourses or lectures references

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

made that doctors, surgeons and physicians were to be utilized in this life to bring about the healing of human ills. I have heard similar statements made as contained in Government's Exhibit 54, at page 35, to the effect that our marvelous doctors and surgeons should be blessed forever for all they have accomplished.

When Mr. Ballard asked me for the alka seltzer, I believed I was surprised that one who was supposed to be a messenger would ask for such an agent. I am familiar with the discourses contained in Government's Exhibit No. 5, page 236 of the "I Am Discourses;" also page 82 of the same exhibit, but that didn't apply to the Ballards.

Mr. Cannon read from Exhibit No. 5, page 236 and at page 82 thereof.

When it got to the time that Mrs. Ballard had the ulcerated throat, I was doubting very greatly. When Mr. Ballard asked for the alka seltzer, I didn't doubt but was surprised. There were other times when the Ballards mentioned the matter of remedial agents to help them regain their health, but by that time I guess I just took it for granted that they were falling off the plan. I still went on serving who I thought was Saint Germain. I was in good faith until the time that I left the enterprise.

Mr. Ballard announced on more than one occation that the diamond that he wore on one hand had been given to him by a Milton [209] Edgar and his

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

wife. The yellow diamond that was supposed to come from the Yellowstone mines was a different diamond. I was present when it was given to him by Mrs. Mildred Boos. It was a 11.80 carat stone. Mrs. Boos didn't say it came from the Yellowstone Diamond Mines, but Mr. Ballard publicly stated so at a meeting in front of other people. I think Mrs. Rogers and my husband were also present. He stated this on several occasions and also that the 12 carat diamond that Mrs. Ballard got from Mrs. Boos came from the same source. Perhaps Mrs. Kitchem was also present.

I certainly did not believe the statement contained in the November, 1938 issue of "The Voice" (Government's Exhibit No. 43) to the effect that the songs, "Rainbow Rays" and "Rose of Light" both came forth through Mr. Ballard. I couldn't do anything about correcting it. I still continued in the activity. When Mr. Ballard said that these songs had healing power, he didn't say that I had told him so. The statement "Each of these records contain the lyrics and music by Godfre Ray King (our own beloved Mr. G. W. Ballard) which are especially charged with powerful healing. The other Music and Lyrics contained on these records were written by Virginia and Vinton La Ferrera and Catherine Rogers." is correct, part of it anyway, but I still maintain he didn't write the music. Mr. Ballard did not write any of the lyrics or music referred

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

to in Government's Exhibit No. 49, the May, 1939 issue of "The Voice," referred to at page 52.

My husband traveled with me and the Ballards after the Shrine class in July of 1938. I am acquainted with my husband's handwriting. This exhibit consisted of two pages. Defendants' Exhibit "P" for identification was marked.

The handwriting in Exhibit "P" for identification is that of my husband. [210]

On a number of occasions Mr. Ballard would sit at the piano and attempt to play something. He did not ask me to write it down, but his idea was that I would get a fragment of the theme and would develop it. Usually he would come in with the lyrics and I would play it a certain way and then another way and then he would take his choice. I would ask Saint Germain to help me find some kind of a theme that Mr. Ballard was trying to have me develop because I could find nothing in what Mr. Ballard was trying to play. This would be a silent prayer I would make. I got the idea that Mr. Ballard wanted me to write down what he was playing because he would say we had a song to write and apparently it was to be his song, so I tried to get his idea as to whether it was to be three quarter melody or four quarter melody, but he didn't understand time, so I didn't have much assistance. (Tr. Vol. 10, p. 1429.)

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

I was told in classes that one's own life energy with which the decrees were given carried the quality of one's own mind and body out into the universal to effect the person who was to be blessed by the decree. At the staff meetings a great deal was said about the change of government of America for the better.

I am not vicious in this case. I haven't any feeling against the Ballards at all.

At the classes it was stated in the decrees that all the discord that was built into everything in the government be set aside and an ascended being take the presidency. They talked about the preservation of America but I don't know about its institutions. At these staff meetings they mentioned about blasting the carcasses of certain government officials. At first the teachings were that one should not use at any time any destructive force and it was quite a shock when I found out we had to do other things. It is true that the matter of the blasting of [211] the carcasses of government officials took place in the first set of meetings that I attended but I was a student since 1935. It is true that from the first meeting I attended of the staff they spoke about blasting carcasses of certain government officials and anyone else who opposed the work. That was in 1937.

Similar statements to the statements contained in the July, 1936 issue of "The Voice," Government's

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

Exhibit 15, on page 26, were constantly given out at these classes.

Mr. Cannon for the defendants read from Exhibit 7, page 97; Exhibit 15, page 26; Exhibit 51, the July, 1939 issue of "The Voice," at page 16, and also from Exhibit 19, the November, 1936 issue of "The Voice," at page 39.

Exception No. 50

Redirect Examination

By Mr. Lazarus:

Q. Mrs. LaFerrera, speaking of patriotism of the accredited messengers, you have also on various occasions heard Guy W. Ballard say he was the reembodiment of George Washington, have you not?

A. Yes, sir.

Mr. Cannon: Just a minute. I object to that on the ground it is leading and suggestive.

The Court: Yes.

Mr. Cannon: And, furthermore, your Honor has ruled we will not be able to prove the truth or falsity of that statement, therefore it is not up for ridicule.

Mr. Lazarus: The matter of patriotism has been brought up. I think anything that would tend to throw any light on it, whether pseudo patriotism or true patriotism, or whatever it might be, is relevant.

The Court: The defense has opened it up and I think [212] the Government should be permitted to show up any other remarks that have been made by the defendants with reference to the Government

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

that would come under the general heading of patriotism.

Mr. Cannon: If the Court please, how could whether or not Mr. Ballard believed he was George Washington have any bearing upon the question of patriotism?

The Court: Unless it was in ridicule of the Government.

Mr. Cannon: I beg your pardon?

The Court: Unless it was in ridicule of the Government.

Mr. Cannon: Oh, yes, if it was that, but not even counsel contends that.

The Court: I can't tell until the testimony is before me, counsel.

Mr. Peterson: Counsel concedes it wasn't ridicule, doesn't he?

Mr. Lazarus: I don't know what was in Mr. Ballard's mind at all times. I will concede it was said in all seriousness.

The Court: It isn't ridicule, then, is it?

Mr. Lazarus: Then let's put it as apparent seriousness.

Mr. Cannon: Then it isn't admissible.

The Witness Continuing: While I was with the I Am organization I heard dictations of the ascended master K-17, the ascended master of the inner secret service.

Mr. Lazarus thereupon read from Exhibit 54, at pages 27 and 30 of the October, 1939 issue of "The Voice."

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

I received two papers, one entitled "Saint Germain's Talk to Staff—Yosemite, August 17, 1938" and another, "Saint Germain's Recent Requests to the Staff." The first was given to me in August of 1938 and the other around December 6, 1937, at [213] West Palm Beach. The paper entitled "Saint Germain's Talk to Staff—Yosemite" was introduced as Government's Exhibit 128, and the other, entitled "Saint Germain's Recent Requests to the Staff" was introduced as Government's Exhibit 129.

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibits 128 and 129.

The words to the music I wrote were written by Mr. Ballard and then he and I rearranged them to make the meter work out right with the music. Most of the words were changed by the time the song got into form for publication.

The reason I stayed in the movement after I began to doubt was because we were told we would have doubts and must weather them. This, I tried to do. Well, we were told that doubt was one of the tests that we had to go through, and it was just like an initiation, and that if we weathered it, we would have passed that test, and so I used to have what I called my little shelf and every time I had a doubt I put it up on the shelf, and finally the shelf broke.

Mr. Lazarus read from "I Am Discourses", at pages 82 and 236.

As part of defense cross examination, defendants were allowed to introduce into evidence Defendants'

(Testimony of Virginia La Ferrera.)

Exhibit Q, being a song book, the "I Am Song Book."

Recross Examination

I had not heard of the destruction of the submarines by issuing a call before I left the activity, but I had heard that the war entity was destroyed. I do not recall that it was explained to me that the issuance of that kind of a call was the same kind of a call that was issued by the children of Israel when the walls of Jericho fell. I remember no reference to the children of Israel or the walls of Jericho. The reference in Exhibit 129, "Your decree for placing Me in the Presidential Chair has enabled Me to do certain things in the government" was understood by me to mean that the tangible presence of an ascended master would be put in the presidential chair. I don't explain why the past tense was used in that phrase" * * * has enabled [214] me * * *". I have heard the statement made at staff meetings that we should not mention persons' names in politics because this was not a political organization.

Redirect Examination

Decrees were made from time to time to blast the carcasses of individuals that they considered vicious toward the activity. I am not acquainted with the particular song book put in evidence by Mr. Cannon, but I am acquainted with the song book. In that song book some of the words of "The Star Spangled Banner" were changed.

MAUDE MILLER HILL

was called as a witness by the Government and testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 10, p. 1469.)

I reside in Chicago. I am acquainted with all of the defendants and was acquainted with Guy W. Ballard before his death. I first became interested in the Ballard organization in 1934 at a class conducted by Margaret Pettit. I met the Ballards in Miami, Florida in 1935. I have attended classes in various parts of the country from 1935 to 1939, in Miami, Dallas, Detroit, Chicago and Los Angeles. I traveled from my home in Chicago to these classes.

In the various classes I heard representations made by the Ballards on the subject matter of cataclysms. Also representations were made about the appearance of ascended masters. The classes extended from seven to seventeen days. The meetings were twice a day. During each session, that is, each ten day period, several dictations would be given. We were told that we could expect the ascended master to appear physically before the classes at any moment, that the only thing that prevented it was that some of the people in the class didn't understand and didn't believe, and hence could prevent a master coming. At these classes we heard about precipitation and ascension.

I first met the defendant Louise Majerus in Chicago in 1935 when Mrs. Ballard introduced us. Mrs. Ballard said that [215] Louise Majerus was an authority in the work of the Ballard organization.

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

Thereafter I purchased books from the Saint Germain Press, Inc. through Miss Majerus. I received a pamphlet entitled "Saint Germain Press" with an order of books I ordered through Miss Majerus.

Said pamphlet was introduced in evidence as Government's Exhibit 130 and Mr. Lazarus read the same to the jury.

One time, while in Chicago, Miss Majerus told me that Mr. and Mrs. Ballard had told her that we could expect the cataclysm very soon. This was in late August or early September of 1936. This conversation took place at Hill's Cafeteria in Chicago, which my husband owns. Miss Majerus said that she would advise me to draw all money out of the bank and keep it on my person, as the time was imminent and we should be prepared for the great cataclysm, particularly the southsiders because the stock yards were to be wiped out and we would feel quite an upheaval there. The Ballards said that Saint Germain had told Mr. Ballard to record his experiences, the true experiences, had with the master Saint Germain, and that the world was now ready for these experiences as they were recorded in the "Unveiled Mysteries," and "The Magic Presence." I was also told that Mr. Ballard had been instructed to record the experiences of Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Donald in these books, also in the third book, "The I Am Discourses." They said that they were divinely inspired and later Mr. Ballard gave discourses from the platform and at different people's homes where

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

he received these discourses from the masters in letters of living light. They were flashed before his eyes like on a ticker tape. At first he had difficulty reading them, so he closed his eyes, but later when he became accustomed to reading them, kept his eyes open.

In my home, Mr. Ballard received a dictation from the [216] Queen of Light. I didn't see the Queen of Light. The dictation was in Mr. Ballard's voice.

I read all three of these books and also "Ascended Master Light," "Adorations and Affirmations," and most of "Ascended Master Discourses."

Mr. Lazarus read from "Unveiled Mysteries," pages 8-12, inclusive, and from "I Am Discourses," page 13; "Ascended Master Discourses," page 9; "Ascended Master Discourses," page 11 and "Ascended Master Light," pages 8, 9.

During my association with the Ballards I gave them money. I put $5 in the love gift box at each meeting that I attended, both afternoon and evening classes. I also gave Mrs. Ballard seven $100 bills at different times between 1935 and 1939. I also gave Mr. Ballard three $100 bills. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard had said that if we did not learn the law of giving that we would not receive. This was said both in class and privately by the Ballards.

Mr. Lazarus read from page 244 of "Unveiled Mysteries."

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

I heard Mr. Ballard use the expression "twin ray." I understood his "twin ray" was Mrs. Ballard. He also said that Marjorie was not Donald's "twin ray," that Donald's "twin ray" was ascended. I dont remember that I heard Mr. Ballard say that Mr. Ballard was his "twin ray," but I do remember about Donald. I have heard Mr. Ballard refer to "Lotus" as being Mrs. Ballard.

I heard Mrs. Ballard use a certain little phrase as follows: "It isn't the dime that buys your pie, it is the letting go of the dime." She also used an example of someone with a tightly closed fistful of pennies, and if you didn't give the pennies out, how could you open your hand and receive hundred dollar bills.

Relative to the ascension, we were told by the Ballards that if we would visualize an imaginary violet consuming flame that would purify our body and take away all the discord and the qualities and remove the human creation about us, with a great desire [217] upon our goal, together with living apart from our husbands, to not eat garlic or onions, to think only kind and loving thoughts, and to keep our attention upon our ascension and to keep our picture formed in our mind,—we were to visualize our ascension to really feel it and know that it was going to take place. We were told that we would purify our physical bodies by giving obedience to the laws set forth in the books, and that we would ascend with the physical body and take it on up out

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

of the earth's atmosphere, that there wouldn't be any trace of the person left.

I read "The Voice" magazine during my association with the Ballard movement. I made personal purchases of the books from the Saint Germain Press.

Mr. Lazarus read from "The Voice," the October, 1936 issue, page 12, Government's Exhibit 18; also from Government's Exhibit 41, the September, 1938 issue of "The Voice," a Beloved Victory's Discourse.

I own four sets and gave away about five complete sets. The reason I had the different sets to give away was because we were told the world was ready for them. At one time we were told in the reading room not to let people stay too long, that an hour was plenty for a person to sit there and read the books. One time Mrs. Ballard came to Chicago and there were people who had been sitting in the reading room a long time. She said to get them out, not to let them sit there for a long time, that they were entities and to clear the air, so some of these people wanted to read the books very badly so I used the four sets that I had to let some of the people take a set, or one of the books, or a copy home with them. I rotated them around. Mrs. Ballard said the reading room was for new students. Everyone who was a hundred percent member or actively interested in the movement had their own

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

[218] copies and were told to own their own copies, and they had no need of the reading room.

In response to the Court's question, the witness stated that at the time that she left the movement the set of books that she referred to included "Unveiled Mysteries," "The Magic Presence," "The I Am Discourses," "The Ascended Master Light," "Ascended Master Discourses," and at first a small book known as the "I Am Affirmations" which was later enlarged with I Am Decrees in it and Affirmations.

Mrs. Ballard made reference to the ascension of Jesus. She read of the ascension of Jesus from the book, "The Prince of the House of David." She told us to get the feel of the ascension that way; that she had been the maiden who wrote the letters, the little Adena, the little Jewish maiden who wrote the letters to her father describing the ascension of Jesus, and that Mr. Ballard had been the Roman centurion; that they were present and that many of us were present during the ascension of Jesus. This Jewish maiden, Adena, was mentioned in the book, "The Prince of the House of David." (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1522.)

Mr. Lazarus read from "The Voice," Government's Exhibit 32, page 3, the December 1937 issue; and from "The Voice," Government's Exhibit 45, page 9, the January 1939 issue.

Mrs. Ballard said that the black magicians were often advanced students, or Chela, who had accom-

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

plished much and had gone far towards perfection, and at some place they had failed and turned around and used destructive force instead of constructive force.

I was still reading "The Voice" magazine in January of 1939. In July of 1938, in Los Angeles, Mrs. Ballard said about my appendix that it was not my own discord of past conduct that caused me to undergo this operation for appendicitis, that it was because my light had grown so bright because of my [219] service to Chicago, that the forces of darkness were attacking the light, and that a black magician had his tail in my side and that Mr. and Mrs. Ballard grappled with it and were unable to bind it, and that they called in Saint Germain and it was even too vicious for him, so they called on the Great Divine Director and the terrible black magician was bound and seized and removed from this earth forever. The appendix had already been removed when this conversation occurred. I believed this statement of Mrs. Ballard. I thereafter continued to help in the reading room. I had my appendix removed in April of 1938 and the conversafion took place in July, 1938.

Exception No. 51

Motion was made by the defendants to strike out the testimony of the witness pertaining to the appendix being the tail of the black magician, on the grounds it was wholly immaterial, that there was no charge in the indictment to sustain it, that it was a

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

statement of a past occurrence that couldn't possibly have been a part of a scheme to defraud; that it was an attempt by the prosecution to get inflammatory testimony before the jury. The motion was denied and exception taken.

The Witness Continuing: I first met William J. Cassiere in Los Angeles in 1936. He and Mrs. Bliss, Mr. and Mrs. Ferguson, and Mr. Stickell were introduced by the Ballards as appointed messengers of Saint Germain. Appointed messengers were those appointed by Saint Germain through Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, who were the accredited messengers. I attended classes conducted by Mr. Cassiere at which classes love gifts were taken and books sold. I received a series of pamphlets from Mr. Cassiere from different cities regarding the conduct of his classes.

These pamphlets were introduced in evidence as Government's Exhibit 131. [220]

I received two letters signed "Brother Bill" from defendant Cassiere, one dated April 28 without year, and the other dated May 20, 1937.

The two letters were introduced in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 132,

and were read to the jury by Mr. Lazarus as follows:

"William J. Cassiere

"April 28..

"Oh you Sweetheart—you Darling—Husband or no—I'll hug you when I see you. (THREAT-

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

AND PROMISE.) The price is Ok for the Hotel and I feel we can secure very comfy chairs reasonable enuf.

"Tell the Princess ok and also tell her I said that Maude was also a Princess. (is—not was—)!!!

"The Book sales to the Reading Room. I'd work in her staff for that even in my class —but—I happen to have a couple who travel with me who sell books and pay their own expenses that way. I'll have my class at 11:30 and at 3 or something like that (for those Sundays.

"Now for the North side and I'll be happy.

"My Love—Peace—Light

"Forevermore

"BROTHER BILL."

A letter dated May 20, 1937, to Maude Hill:

"Beloved Sister of the Light:

"Because of the press of correspondence, arranging for classes, and one thing and another, I did not seem to have time to answer your wonderful letter of May 12th. [221]

"I am grateful beyond words for your offer to do anything that you can to be of further ~~assistance to me~~. You have been a darling all the way through, in doing as much as you have done. It was so sweet of you to reserve a room with bath for me at the Hayes Hotel. I shall

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

be happy to avail myself of those accommodations.

"God bless you & love you!!!

"Paul Stickell's class no doubt is finished by this time, and I trust that you became well acquainted with him, and that the class was a big success.

"Thank you for sending me the leaflets about Muriel Bliss. Always glad to be informed of what is going on. See enclosures!

"Even tho my recent Denver class was not in virgin territory, there was plenty there to crack; and you know what a "cracker" I am.

"If you see any of those blessed San Franciscans, give them my Love and Blessings, because I sure do love 'em.

"And you too, blessed one. Love, Wisdom, Power: LIGHT to you!

"Ever yours in its Service, I AM

"BROTHER BILL.

"Love to the Princess too and her crew—her students and her Royal family!"

I heard Mr. Cassiere make similar statements at classes as the Ballards made relative to ascension, also relative to cataclysms; also relative to healings. He invited the ascended masters to make appearances in tangible form at [222] his classes, but I never saw them.

I received a letter from Guy W. Ballard dated

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

July 4, 1935, from the Hotel Figueroa. This letter was received in Evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 133,

and was read by Mr. Lazarus:

"Mr. and Mrs. Hill,

"Beloved Students:

"So long I have wanted to write you, since our delightful, blessed stay in your home in that beautiful spot. How we should love to come again or going east but feel that is not possible, this season and who knows what blessing are in store for next season.

"It looks now that it will be necessary for us to give another class in San Francisco before going east. In that case we will return east in the most delightful month September.

"How we did enjoy being there with you in your blessed home. We shall never forget it and how we had hoped you could be here for class. We did have marvelous trip through Yellowstone, the Tetons, Bryce, Grand and Zion canyons, finishing at Boulder Dam the most marvelous achievement of modern engineering.

"I am constantly asking the Mighty 'I Am' Presence and the Host of Ascended Masters enable them to make a very rich strike at your mine there. That it may re-enact the marvels of the Rayborn experience." * * * *

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

"Have just received our first shipment of the marvelous new pictures of Saint Germain made by Mr. Sindelar who is in New York having [223] them made now. The page proofs of the 'I Am Discourses' will be here Sat. morning. In two or three weeks they will be off the press."

"* * * *

"THE BALLARDS

"Per G. W. B."

We had a gold mine on some property we owned near Yosemite, where the Ballards had stayed at our Yosemite home.

Mr. Lazarus read "The Magic Presence," Government's Exhibit No. 4, at pages 45-49, and at pages 143-145.

I was acquainted with the defendant Betty O. Mundy. When I first met Mrs. Mundy, the Ballards were guests at her home and she was making them comfortable. This was in 1935. She had no servants and was waiting on them herself. Then she went with the Ballards from Miami and did their typewriting and later took charge of selling the books at the book counters. I received a letter dated July 23, 1936, signed "Betty," which was in the handwriting of Betty Mundy.

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

Said letter was introduced as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 134,

a portion of which was read to the jury by Mr. Lazarus as follows:

"Figueroa Hotel,
"Los Angeles, Calif.,
"July 23, 1936.

"My dear Maude Hill:

"Am I dreaming or did I see you in Los Angeles recently? The time passes so rapidly, so swiftly that I hardly know whether it's real or not, and just to think I did not get to see you again before you left for Chicago. I presume it was because Mrs. B. and I had gone up in the mountains to work on manuscript for [224] the Magazine. We were up there five days and it surely was marvelous to be where it was quiet, no telephone, no interruptions, no nothing but just stick to work and we did accomplish getting manuscript ready for two month's of the Voice, and will they be hot ones, August & Sept.

"I know you are busy with your work and doing things since you returned and I'm wondering if you received a copy of the Entity Affirmations before you left. To make sure I am sending you one; also a copy of Mr. B.'s July 4th Invocation and St. Germain's talk to the Messengers on July 3rd. These are both com-

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

ing out in the Sept. issue of the Magazine, but I want you to have them to study. The two decrees made for siezing and bind entities I think the most wonderful yet and I personally get more kick out of using them than these I am enclosing, but these are the ones Groups are using out her en masse, also individuals. I use them all, but these in the July 4th article are so to the point and powerful that I find myself using them. I have made a list of things and conditions I go through daily and if I have left out anybody or anything that needs a swat I don't know where it could be. I start with Official Family, take in the Government, on down to political activities, criminals, penal institutions, insane asylums, schools, colleges, metaphysical activities, occult activities; doctors, nurses, school teacher, policemen, firemen, aviators, stock exchanges, movie colonies, spiritualistic and Astrological [225] activities; drought, excessive heat; cemeteries and stock yards; radio stations, Sindelar Studios, Pelly H. Spencer Lewis, Spaulding, Jews and Jesuits. Messengers and Group Leaders, I AM Reading Rooms, I AM Students; Chicago Office and girls; also I have a few pet individuals out here that I give a swat occasionally, and does it work!!! Just try it out with dynamic activity and watch the effects.

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

"Of course I'm not telling you what to do, I just give you a sample of what I try to do daily, and always get through it once or more each day besides my other protective work, etc. If I did not stop and do this work I could not keep going with the other things I do, but it is marvelous how things open up when I stop and do this first."

* * * *

"Lovingly and Sincerely yours,

"BETTY"

I received a letter from Betty Mundy, dated August 8, 1935, through the mails. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1559.)

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 135,

a portion of which was read to the jury by Mr. Lazarus as follows:

"Figueroa Hotel,
"Los Angeles, Calif,
"August 8, 1935.

"My dearest Sister in the Light:

* * *

"I met your Auntie in San Diego and think she is perfectly lovely. I wish I could have [226] had more time with her, but you can imagine there is little time to visit while one is selling

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

books, etc. Perhaps we might see each other again and have a chat. I know you enjoyed having her with you in Ahwahnee, and she did have such a grand time. She also enjoyed the classes in San Diego so much; that is, those she attended, as I don't think she got to attend them all; however, she bought the books and has ordered the Discourses and I know with what you have helped her she will move forward in this work.

"We are expecting an advance shipment of the Discourses here for the L. A. class and the others should be out about the 20th. I take it that you will get your copy there in Chicago when they come out, so I will not attempt to fill the order you asked me to ship you, for you can get them there quicker than I could ship them from here and fear I might duplicate an order.

"There is so much I could say, yet when I sit down to write there seems little one can say. We have been on the jump pretty hard and will be for many months to come, however, the work moves forward, and in spite of all the things that come up, it moves toward Perfection all the time. Sometimes in my own experiences I marvel that Perfection can crowd through, but I find the 'Mighty I AM' works regardless of the human inharmonies, all it

(Testimony of **Maude Miller Hill.**)

needs is the call and an opportunity to move in." [227]

"* * * *

"Sincerely yours,
"BETTY O. MUNDY."

Mr. Stickell was an appointed messenger of the ascended masters. He held classes in various parts of the country. Love gifts were taken up and representations were made at these meetings regarding healing, precipitation, ascension, and appearances of ascended masters. In 1938, Mr. Stickell, in the presence of Mrs. Bliss, told me that he had seen the ascended master Saint Germain. He did not say in what manner he had seen him, whether he came in a blaze of light, stating that all he was permitted to say was that he had seen Saint Germain. He said he could understand how Mr. Ballard received letters of living light on a ticker tape because he, Mr. Stickell, had had the same experience. Mr. Stickell said he had given up a good law practice in Chicago to carry the light forth.

Cross Examination

Mr. Cannon read from "The Voice", Exhibit 15, page 8, and Exhibit 65, at page 165.

I attended a few of Mr. Stickell's classes and a great deal more of Mr. Cassiere's. Both taught the Ballard books, perhaps a different way of expression. I didn't see Mrs. Ballard within a month of

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

my operation. She did not tell me not to have an operation. I took an anaesthesia for it. I observed the stitches in my side afterwards. I saw my appendix removed. I had a spinal. The black magicians were described as individuals, not animals. My concept of them was very vague. I was not a member of the staff of the I Am, nor an appointed messenger, nor a group reader. Mrs. Pettit first told me about the I Am. It was in 1934. She, Mrs. Pettit, explained the operation of the presence and gave me the fundamentals of the belief. My daughter Alice was with me. I went to Mrs. [228] Pettit's home several times in the evenings and several other students were there. Mr. Stickell was not present. I first read the "Unveiled Mysteries" after I had met the Ballards in 1935. My daughter gave me the first one. Before I bought any books from the Saint Germain Press, I read this book of my daughter's. When I loaned the books, I did so with the thought of spreading the instruction. Sometimes I loaned the new books that came out before I had read them myself. I was a good friend of Mrs. Bliss, who conducted the reading room in Chicago.

The Ballards told me that Miss Majerus was their representative in Chicago at the Saint Germain Press in their absence. I saw her many times at the office of the Saint Germain Press. She did the clerical work there.

The discourse that Mrs. Ballard read in my home in 1938 came through the Queen of Light. It wasn't

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

so much about cataclysms, but more of a personal nature regarding the class. It was never published and I just remember spots of it. I cannot give the fullness of it. I don't remember any mention having been made by the Ballards about the spirit of God. I suppose that I heard them use the word "spirit." We were taught that the human body was the outer shell for the I Am Presence to work through. I was taught everything in the first three books. We were told that the cataclysm would be a great upheaval of the earth's surface. We were not told at the Ballard classes that the purpose of our giving was to spread the light of truth. We were told that we should give to all, because we could not expect to receive unless we gave. I was not interested in giving in the sense that it related to my health, as I had good health. When I gave Mr. Ballard the three $100 bills at different times I merely handed him the bill folded. The same thing happened with Mrs. Ballard when I gave her the seven $100 bills, except the time when I gave her a purse with a bill [229] in it. Mrs. Ballard didn't ask for the money, except she lectured about the law of giving, and that is why I gave. There might be a distinction between love gifts and gifts of love. I intended to give a gift. I loved the Ballards. I was principally interested in the ascension feature of the work. I wanted to be able to leave the earth and take my body with me.

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

My husband's name is Louie E. Hill. I called him "Louie."

A letter was marked for identification as Defendants' Exhibit R for identification.

This letter is in my handwriting. I read the first page of Government's Exhibit 3, one of the first things I read of the I Am movement. (Exhibit 3 is entitled "The Ascension" and appears on page XIII of "Unveiled Mysteries.") I read the Discourse of Saint Germain from the December, 1938 issue of "The Voice of the I Am" (Government's Exhibit 44, page 5). I was instructed as to certain things to do or not to do to attain the goal of ascension. I was told not to eat garlic, to live apart from my husband. I joined the 100 percent group of Zora Swingley at Chicago. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1615.) I can't remember just when I joined the 100 percent group. I was in court the other day when the 100 percent pledge was read but I think Mr. Rogers had a different one for his class than the first one that Mrs. Swingley had. I believe they were different. I think Mr. Rogers put a few things more in his class. The pledge I signed had the provision, "The Divine creative force is to be used solely for providing a physical vehicle for a brother seeking physical re-embodiment." We were told many times by Mrs. Ballard there wasn't time for that any more. During the course of my study I thought I had some manifestations of my own of the power

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

of healing. I recall a blue flame coming from my pen when I was writing at one time. [230]

A document was marked as Defendants' Exhibit S for identification.

I wrote Exhibit S for identification. I was referring to Mr. and Mrs. Ballard by "My Dearly Beloved Ones." In the previous letter (Exhibit R for identification) I was referring to Mr. and Mrs. Ballard as "Beloved Messengers of the Light."

Exhibits R and S for identification were received in evidence as Defendants' Exhibits R and S.

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT S

reads as follows:

"My Dearly Beloved Ones:

"I am so grateful to you for your letter of Love and Encouragement—How greatly have I been blessed, in having the privilege of having you in my home!! Do you know that sometimes I feel like pinching myself to find out if it really is true that so much can come my way! I know one should not condemn themselves, but sometimes I can hardly understand why I have been allowed such great blessings! I feel very humble, and oh, so grateful to you! for your love and instructions.

"I have another 'Miracle' to tell you. Remember at Ahwahnee, I told you I could not understand why my anniversary gifts were 'taken'—'misplaced'—'lost'—or something?

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

You advised me not to release and to know they were not lost.

"Well, where do you suppose they appeared? I awakened one morning last week with the conviction that I must go to my deposit box as soon as I could get there. I rummaged thru it—and in my large brown insurance envelope were reposing the Diamond & platinum Brooch and Pendant and also a valuable Russian medallion. They were [231] not there Christmas! I surely got on my knees and thanked the Presence—St. Germain and you—right there in the vault and I accept it as it was shown me! How can one ever doubt??

"Mrs. Mayer and Sherwood Pinkerton were here last week and one evening we were fortunate to have them and the Majerus sisters and Alice & Bee for dinner—it was such a feast of Light and Love and how much we thought of you Blessed Ones—I have been with you many nights lately and oh how marvelous it is to know there is no separation!

"We have been so blessed by becoming acquainted with the Majerus girls—they are so lovely and so sincere. Mr. Cassiere has been in to see us and brought in four people from Oak Park to dinner the other night. He is nice and I will send several to his classes in Peoria and in Davenport.

"I am so glad the Light is spreading and that

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

the classes are so powerful! Each night and many times daily I thank my 'Presence' and St. Germain and ask them to give you strength and courage and protection. Lou joins me in sending you a heart full to overflowing with Love and Gratitude!

"MAUDE M. HILL."

Exhibit S was written sometime between 1936 and 1939, I can't fix the date. My husband was in the cafeteria business when I wrote that letter.

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT R reads as follows:

"Ahwahnee, California, [232]
"July 13, 1935.

"Beloved Messengers of the Light:

"Let me try to express to you my deep gratitude for the beautiful letter you sent me. Taking your precious time to help and encourage me—well my gratitude is just simply boundless! Then too, you sent the Chart of The Magic Presence and it is my daily inspiration. How can I possibly thank you for your loving kindness?

"Last evening I finished reading your dynamic book "The Magic Presence"—I read it all thru very slowly, reluctant to turn the next page, I wanted it to last forever! The tremen-

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

dous Radiation it carries with it is indeed no Myth—last evening the Current was pouring thru me and coming right out the tips of my fingers! I thank my 'Mighty I Am' every day (many times) for the privilege of owning such a book and oh! you gave me something to carry me completely thru this life, when you gave me the joy of having you here those few wondrous days. I love you both and Don so deeply—After adoration to my 'Presence' and St. Germain—the Blessed Ballards are next and I send you all of the love of my being and ask the Presence to protect and hold you forever as the Ideal of America—because you are Ideal Americans.

"Louie was again called to Chicago and is taking over our Cafeteria business again. I am sure it is right and when we apply—consciously—our teachings how can we fail? I am [233] sure the Presence will release the fund in trust, in the bank, to him that he will have adequate means to get us established and started again.

"Our daughter, Alice's, husband has a splendid position in Davenport, Iowa, and is well advanced since the powerful radiation you send him—can you believe that he has been told (last week) that he is to be made Vice Pres. of the finance company he is working for? So—another one of your powerful rays has borne

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

fruit—can you possibly understand my grati tude?

"With an undying boundless Love, 'I Am' ever in the 'Light.'

"MAUDE M. HILL

P.S. I'll be seeing you in Chicago. M."

I recall the following subjects from Government's Exhibit 7 in evidence, the "I Am Adorations and Affirmations and I Am Decrees:" "Automobile Protection," "Aviation, transportation, communication, and public utilities," "To any City," "Any Country to Give Help," "Annihilate Lying and Deceit," "Army and Navy," "Alabaster Cities, the Holy Cities," "Appetites," "Annihilation of all Gambling," "Blessing of the United States of America," "Blessing for our Flag," "Blessing the Americas," "Eternal Protection of America," "Fear, Doubt, and Grief Entities," "Healing Angels," "Health and Law Forgiveness," "The Justice," "Legal Decree," "Light," "Mining," "Obedience to Divine Plan for Perfecting America," "Perfection in the I AM Work," "Protect America from War," "Perfect Weather Conditions and Crops," "The Press," "Policemen, Firemen, Aviators, and Public Servants," "Racial Distinctions," "Strike Agitators," "School," "Sight and Hearing," "Serums," and "Strikes." [234]

I recall decrees being given on all those subjects. I, in giving these decrees, would try to visualize

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

them and demand them, believing they would be given to me or take place. I was told that these decrees were given for the betterment of every channel in which there is anything constructive. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1629.) I heard Mr. Cassiere give decrees to hold back the cataclysms.

I know Max Gysi. He was in my home with the Ballards. A document was marked as Defendants' Exhibit T for identification.

I wrote that letter (Defendants' Exhibit T for identification).

Mr. Cannon read from "The I Am Discourses", Government's Exhibit 5, at p. 16.

Redirect Examination

When I wrote the letters to the Ballards and Mr. Gysi, I believed everything the Ballards told me. I read among the "I Am Decrees" those concerning ascension en masse; another, for blessing coming classes and auditoriums; another for charging energy in gas belts; another for the removal of entities, discarnate and carnate. We had decrees for the blasting of the carcasses of our enemies. Prior to the time that "The Voice," December, 1938 issue came out (Government's Exhibit 44), we were told that our ascension would be with our physical bodies, that ascension was never, never made after death. I know of my own knowledge when Guy Ballard died.

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit 44, at p. 14.

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

Recross Examination

You could not be a 100 percent student unless you abided by the sheet that you signed. All students didn't give up smoking, drinking and those things, so they weren't entitled to 100 percent status. Mrs. Bliss in Chicago, who conducted her [235] meetings similar to the Ballards, had books for sale at the reading room.

At this point there appeared to be no further examination by counsel, and Juror Darsie inquired as to what happened to the telegram about the appendix operation that the witness was to bring.

The witness replied that it was at her hotel room in a scrapbook and that Mrs. Bliss was going to bring it down tomorrow.

Juror Aldrich then asked when Mr. Ballard died, and it was stipulated that he died on December 29, 1939. The witness added that when she bought books she did not get a discount.

Thereupon,

further recross examination

was had and the witness testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1647.)

In explaining that our physical bodies would ascend at ascension, they explained that that was the way Jesus had ascended, explaining that Jesus did not die on the cross, that the cord was never severed, that he never really went through death. Then, in reply to the question as to whether she had been told that the ascension would occur in the

(Testimony of Maude Miller Hill.)

same manner as in which Jesus had ascended, the witness replied she didn't think she was going to ascend from a cross.

"The Court: Just a moment.

The witness is very clear, Mr. Cannon, on both her direct and her cross examination on that point, and the witness' testimony is this: that the teaching was that under certain conditions the whole body would ascend, if this light was not broken, but if the person died then the light was broken and it was impossible to have physical ascension.

The Witness: That is right." [236]

PATON B. CROUSE,

called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I live in Sierra Madre, and my occupation is industrial engineering with Vultee Aircraft, Inc. I have been so engaged for a year and a half and prior to that I was associated with the Ballards for about three and a half years. I worked in the capacity of personal secretary for the late Mr. Ballard. He died December 29, 1939 in Los Angeles. I started with the Ballards in July 1936 here in Los Angeles. My connection ended in March of 1940, likewise in Los Angeles.

Most of the time my principal duty was handling correspondence which came addressed to the Ballards or questions regarding the work or conduct of

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

study groups and reading rooms. During the last part, I handled almost all of the correspondence regarding study groups and reading rooms. I attended to the making of reservations at the various hotels and meeting places, the halls, and the setting up of the contracts. I worked under the supervision of Mr. and Mrs. Ballard at all times. During the period of time that I was with the movement, I was a sincere believer in the teachings promulgated by the Ballards, and even after leaving the movement in March 1940 I still believed in the principles and teachings of the movement for some period of time. I was with Mr. Ballard when he apparently became ill or was not as well as he had been formerly. That was most noticeable in Yosemite when we were staying at the Ahwahnee Hotel there in the summer of 1939. When I traveled from class to class during the last period of time, I would use the same room as Mr. Ballard. I looked after him constantly and was in constant attendance upon him. At Yosemite in the latter part of July, or the first of August, his ankles, which had been swelling for some time, became worse. The swelling became larger and larger and more and more painful, and from then on I massaged his ankles at least once a day and [237] then twice, and then later on more and more frequently. He also had a great deal of pain around his shoulders and his back, and I massaged them frequently. I also went out and bought things he wanted to use for remedies, salves and ointments

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

and liniments, and medicines to help alleviate the pain. I used to purchase a laxative for him and he used a laxative constantly from the beginning of my association with him. He used Feenamint more than anything else. He took Feenamint every night, as I recall, and usually two. He became more and more troubled with the illness in his feet and ankles and legs, until at Washington, D. C., he first missed attending a class, and he stayed in his room at that time and was given treatments and messages and chiropractic adjustments, and so forth, by Dr. Bressler there. He had been attending classes under the greatest sort of pain, complaining a great deal about the pain as he went on the platform and took his part. Sometimes he would leave the platform and come backstage so he could lift his feet up in the air and rest them while Mrs. Ballard and Donald carried on the class. Then he would go on the platform again. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1655.) Finally, in Washington, D. C., he missed one meeting because he couldn't go down, and from that time on his condition became worse until at the Los Angeles class he didn't go to class. The Washington class was in November and December of 1939. He was in bed a good part of the time during the stay at Washington, D. C., and from then on after he came to Los Angeles, I don't believe he left his room more than a half dozen times to go out. His room was at the Biltmore Hotel in the first place, then at the home of his son Donald. I was in constant attend-

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

ance while he was at the Biltmore. He was removed to the home of his son about three weeks before his death. A physician and surgeon was called in attendance three or four days before his death, although Dr. Bressler had been in attendance all the time. He came to Los Angeles with [238] Mr. Ballard, making the whole trip with him, taking care of him every day and night. He was a chiropractic doctor. Dr. Claude Davidson was the doctor who attended Mr. Ballard, and before him a Mr. McAlister, I believe. An operation was performed on Mr. Ballard prior to his death to tap the body cavity and remove large quantities of solution. I wasn't present in the room during the operation. I was present in the house and saw Dr. Davidson come there. I was present at the death of Mr. Ballard and saw his body after he died. His body remained here on earth and I was present at the funeral. Mr. Stickell was also present. Mr. Cassiere was not present at the funeral, but was present at the house before the funeral and after Mr. Ballard's death and right before his death. Betty Mundy and Donald were present at his funeral. (Mr. Neukom read from the March 1940 issue of "The Voice" page 19, and from Exhibit 29, the September 1937 issue of "The Voice", at page 16.)

During Mr. Ballard's illness and prior to his death I continued to do secretarial work and after his death, I continued to do secretarial work in

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

conjunction with Mrs. Ballard prior to the time that I left the movement in March of 1940.

I have seen Government's Exhibit 136 for identification, and I am quite familiar with it in conjunction with this work, in connection with answering letters received through the mails. I am also familiar with the folder, which is Government's Exhibit 137 for identification. It was used in conjunction with the other folder also; except as to the tabs, one is the original and one is a carbon copy. Exhibit 136 for identification is the copy that was used by the secretary. The Ballards received letters from time to time while I was with them and they would receive letters from time to time in which money or checks were enclosed. Such letters were received in the interval between the illness of Mr. Ballard, when he was no longer able to carry on to the full [239] extent, and the time when I left the movement. Mrs. Ballard received such letters. I recollect the subject matter and contents of letters received of the character just mentioned. I was in Los Angeles in December of 1940 when during most of that month Mr. Ballard was confined to bed. Letters were received at the Biltmore Hotel. I received most of them. I went down to the mail department and collected the Ballard mail for them. That was part of my duties. I got the mail and opened a good deal of it, and then, having read it, decided whether I should handle it or whether it was something for Mrs. Mundy, or something for

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

one of the other secretaries to answer, and also whether or not Mr. or Mrs. Ballard would be interested in it and want to read it. The Ballards had instructed me to handle the mail in that way. Then those letters which were from particular friends of theirs or had some particular important message in them were taken to Mrs. Ballard or to Mr. Ballard to read, depending on the nature of the message and who it was from. The other mail was turned over to Mrs. Mundy, if it concerned the radio transcriptions or the radio broadcasts, or the business matters in connection with the books. I guess I handled all the rest of it, to be answered with the use of these form paragraphs, (Vol. 11, p. 1668), or by dictation to a stenographer. The mail that I received other than that which was turned over direct to Mrs. Ballard during the illness of Mr. Ballard or Betty Mundy did contain checks and bills, currency. I recall letters which made mention of illness. I suppose if I thought long enough I could recall the names and addresses of some of the persons that asked for help.

Many letters received were of the character wherein the party writing mentioned the subject of illness. Between 25 and 50 letters a day were received in the last two years that I was with the Ballards. About half of the correspondence was in [240] the nature of a request for healing of some sort or another. I would say about a quarter of those letters enclosed money.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

Exception No. 52.

I recall the name of a person writing a letter and the city from which it was received, a letter that stands out in my mind. I recall several letters received from a man in Boston. I can't quite recall his name, I am sorry. He was requesting healing in connection with his blindness.

Mr. Cannon: Just a minute. I object to that, if the Court please, and for the purpose of making my objection I ask that the answer go out. I make the objection on the ground there is no sufficient foundation laid.

Thereupon the objection was overruled by the Court. Exception.

The Witness: The gentleman was an attorney who published a book of aid to attorneys, something about how to ask questions in law. I think it was some sort of a question and answer book. He attended the class in Boston and was very much impressed by what the Ballards said from the platform concerning people who had written to them for assistance and had been healed after they had written to the Ballards—this is his quoting from what the Ballards said from the platform—and he therefore wanted an interview with Mr. Ballard so that Mr. Ballard could heal him. I took the request to Mr. Ballard and Mr. Ballard said he was sorry but he was too busy and couldn't see the gentleman. The attorney's selling of these books took him all around the country from town to town, so he would

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

write the Ballards from these other towns and each time he would write he would send a post office money order for five or ten dollars and would ask him to do some work for his eyes, to make decrees for them to be healed, and explained how necessary it was for this healing to be received so that he could continue his business of writing and selling these books. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1679) [241]

I am sorry, I cannot remember correspondence between the particular dates, December 15, 1939 and January 1, 1940, concerning any particular letter that was received requesting aid for their ailments and also enclosing money. I prepared answers to letters received between those dates. The procedure followed was established in November of 1939 in Washington. I had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard in which I asked her what she wanted me to do with the mail which, before that time, I had been taking up with Mr. Ballard. He was too ill to handle those questions and answer them himself, and I asked what was I to do about it, and she said to carry on just as I had been with him, handling the mail in the *say* way and take them to her for her signature instead of to him for his signature. So in carrying on that method I used, wherever possible, a set of form paragraphs similar to these I had written up to replace those in Government's Exhibit 136 for identification. I got Government's Exhibit 136 for identification from Mrs. Ketcham, a secretary, who was with the Ballards prior to my going with them and remained with them during

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

most of the time that I was with them. She handled a good part of the correspondence as secretary the same I did. I have seen Mr. Ballard look at the folders, Government's Exhibits 136 and 137 for identification. I have never seen Mrs. Ballard look at the folders. Mr. Ballard went over the different paragraphs with me, discussed whether they were worded the way they should be worded, whether that is the way he wanted his correspondence to go out, worded in that manner or not. I did not have a discussion with Mr. Ballard prior to his formulating of Government's Exhibits 136 and 137, as a result of which these letters were prepared. I heard Mary Ketcham discuss it with him in 1938 or late in 1937.

Exception No. 53

Q. What is your recollection of the discussion? [242]

Mr. Cannon: I object to that on the ground it is hearsay.

The Court: As to the hearsay, that will be overruled.

The Witness: I believe it was in Chicago during our class in Chicago. Mary Ketcham, Mrs. Ballard and myself were present.

Mr. Cannon: May my objection be renewed at this time?

The Court: Same objection. Same ruling. Exception.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

The Witness: There was a discussion as to whether these paragraphs were worded in the way the Ballards wanted their paragraphs worded in the answers going out to these letters, the letters that were received in the mail and turned over to Mrs. Ketcham to answer. I also called Mr. Ballard's attention to the fact that Mrs. Ballard had objected to the use of form paragraphs back in 1936 when I first went with the Ballards, and Mr. Ballard said that that objection had been overruled, that Mrs. Ballard had withdrawn it, because the mail was so heavy they couldn't handle it with secretaries any other way. (Vol. 11, p. 1689.)

Exception No. 54

Mr. Cannon: I move to strike out that testimony that it could not be the declaration of a co-conspirator on the theory that it refutes any concert of action rather than to sustain it. It is an exculpatory statement and not an incriminating one.

The Court: Overruled. Exception allowed.

Mr. Neukom: Continue on. Give the further answer of that conversation.

The Witness: Mr. Ballard said to go ahead and answer the mail that way because a much larger volume of correspondence could be handled in that way and we were getting behind. We had at that time some three or four hundred letters that had to be answered, that had been waiting around for weeks, and we hadn't been able to catch up with

(Testimony of Paton B. C
them. He discussed that at that time. [243] Government's Exhibit 136 was before Mr. Ballard when that conversation took place. Thereafter, I observed Mrs. Ketcham reply to mail utilizing Government's Exhibit 137 and I used it myself. So far as I recall, the conversation between Mrs. Ballard and myself in November 1939 at Washington after Mr. Ballard became ill, was that I asked Mrs. Ballard if I should continue handling the mail in the same way it had been handled, and her answer was yes, only that I should bring the letters to her for signature. Between December 15, 1939 and March of 1940, I brought letters which I had caused to be written to her for signature. I recall from what source I received the contents of those letters. It was from the book of paragraphs, but not Government's Exhibits 136 and 137. That had been replaced by another set of paragraphs by that time. This is the one that Mary Ketcham used, and at the conversation that I talked to you about some time ago, we discussed with Mr. Ballard whether he liked the wording of these paragraphs. I suggested some other paragraphs that seemed to be worded more in line with the way the Ballards wrote their letters when they dictated them themselves, and Mr. Ballard approved these other paragraphs, so I can't say that I used these books. The preparation of the new set of letters or paragraphs must have been early in 1939 while I was working at the Biltmore Hotel and later in the Northwest as we went on our trip. I

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

don't know whether they were ever presented to or shown Mrs. Ballard. They were shown to Mr. Ballard and every word was gone over.

Exception No. 55

Q. Did you have a discussion with him on them?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you relate the discussion?

Mr. Cannon: I object to that on the ground it is hearsay as against the other defendants, and no proper or any foundation laid. [244]

The Court: Overruled. Exception allowed.

The Witness: The substance of the conversation was that he liked those paragraphs better and wanted me to use them, but he would allow Mary Ketcham to continue to use these other paragraphs that she had been using right along. Mary Ketcham left the movement during the class in Chicago in September or October of 1939. I took her duties upon myself at Mr. and Mrs. Ballard's direction. During the period after she left, I had occasions to answer letters that had been received in the mail by using a paragraph from a book that I had prepared, the one I testified to just a while ago. Over a period of time, it would average probably 10 or 15 letters a day, that I would answer in that manner. During the time we were actually handling them, it would run 50 or 60 or more letters a day. It would accumulate while we were traveling and then we would clean it up. I would present the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

letters after they had been typed and I had checked them over to Mr. Ballard for him to sign. Prior to doing that, I did not give the letters to Mr. Ballard to read. I had a conversation with him with regard to that.

Mr. Neukom: I am referring to the utilization of the paragraphs that you have testified to that you stated that he and you went over in the early part of 1939, the one that you prepared.

The Witness: The instructions with regard to that were when we read the letter and it called for help, we were to call to our own presence and to his higher mental body to have the healing sent and the work done and taken care of. We received the same instructions from Mrs. Ballard in connection with handling those letters. Then we would have the answer prepared and after it was prepared we would take it either to Mr. Ballard or to Mrs. Ballard for them to sign, and they would sign it. Mr. Ballard never read the letters that he signed. He would sign 50 or 60 letters, more or less; sometimes only 10; sometimes 80 or 90 in [245] a big stack, and we would just put them under his pen for signature. If I opened the letters containing currency, I would turn the currency over to Mr. Ballard. If he opened the letters, which he frequently did, he would take the currency out and the checks out and then turn the letters over to me, and then he would give me the checks to cash. Whenever he opened the letters he would give me

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

whatever checks were there. I would accumulate them until I had enough to be worth while making a trip down to cash the checks. (Tr. Vol. 11, p. 1698.)

I cannot give the substance of the paragraphs which I prepared with which to answer the letters. I can give the substance of some of the paragraphs. I do not have in my possession any of the ones that were used in my book. I left that book with the secretary then when I left. Her name was Bertha Livingood. I saw Government's Exhibit 136 being utilized to answer certain letters during the life of Mr. Ballard.

Thereupon

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 138

was offered and received in evidence. Said exhibit reads as follows: (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1709.)

(Telegram) "Detroit, Michigan, May 2, 1938.

"Mrs. Maude Hill, Dearborn Hospital,
Madera, California.

"We are with you blessed one and all perfection shall fill you at once. Our love is like a mountain to protect and bless you with every good thing and to keep you protected without limit. Our arms are around you and all is well. All here enfold you in their love.

Ever in the Light.

"MR. AND MRS. BALLARD."

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

The Witness: The paragraph book that I prepared was prepared some time in the early part of 1939. The one Mary Ketcham used was prepared in Chicago in the latter part of 1937 or the early part of 1938. I utilized Exhibit 137 prior to the time I [246] prepared my paragraph book in 1939, between the time they were first written up and the time I prepared my book. In connection with letters received in the year 1938 as the Ballard class traveled from place to place and the writer of the letter mentioned illness and enclosed currency, I had occasion during the year 1938 to utilize Exhibits 136 and 137. I used it on many occasions, virtually every month. Every time we handled mail, which was for several successive days at each new location, each new town. The procedure was, having read the letter or during the reading of the letter, the number of the paragraph that contained the appropriate answer would be written on the face of the letter with a crayon. That number might be for a paragraph saying, "Blessed Student of the Light, we thank you for your letter of blank date," which the stenographer would then take from the letter. I would handle the answering of the letter myself and when doing so, I would have before me, sometimes four or five hundred letters, maybe. They were an accumulation sometimes of a period over several weeks. I would read the letters and as I read them would place symbols upon

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

them. As I read a paragraph that said, "Enclosed is a love gift," that letter, when it was opened, if it had a love gift in it, the word "love" would be marked in the corner of the letter, just the word "love", and no amount was written there. That would indicate that we would, in writing an answer, say, "Thank you for the love gift enclosed," except that we didn't say, "Thank you for the love gift," we used a paragraph that said, "Thank you for the expression of love enclosed," rather than stating that it was a love gift, then we would go on to the next part of the letter.

If it asked for help in connection with healing, we would pick out the paragraph that answered that as nearly as need be, and write the number of that paragraph on the face of the letter, and then a number representing a paragraph for a closing [247] to the letter. We would place the numbers upon the original received letter in crayon. The number would correspond with an index number in the paragraph book, Government's Exhibit 136. In doing this, I had the copy of the paragraph book with the subject, the original, Government's Exhibit 137, before me. The letters with the crayon markings were then all turned over to a typist. She would refer to the paragraph number and type it verbatim. I actually saw the typist have before her Government's Exhibit 137 and observed her writing the answers to the letters that I handed to her for reply. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1716, 1717.) After

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

completing them, she would bring a stack of the letters to me. I would take them to Mr. Ballard and he would sign them. He didn't read the replies, except when there was some reply that I thought needed some special attention on his part, and I would call it to his particular attention. The great bulk of them were never read. I would place this stack of letters in front of him, not too thick a stack, if there were too many I would put two stacks or three stacks one after another, and he would sign them one after another, and as soon as he had finished signing one I would pick it off the pile and he would sign the next one.

Exception No. 56

Mr. Neukom: Now that I have laid that foundation, your Honor, I am going to offer in evidence Government's Exhibits 136 and 137.

Mr. Peterson: There will be the same objection we have heretofore made. They do not tend to prove or disprove any of the issues in this case; hence they are inadmissible.

Said objection was overruled and Exhibits 136 and 137 were received in evidence. Exception allowed.

The Witness: Prior to the time I prepared my form book, I had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard with regard to letters that were going out in answer to letters that were being received. [248] It was toward the end of 1938, I believe. On one particu-

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

lar occasion, Mrs. Ballard said that she did not want letters going out acknowledging a love gift, or she did not want the letters marked showing the amount of money received, but only that they should be marked with the word "love" and the reply, in going out, should not state that we had received a gift, but rather to thank them for an expression of love received, and when I wrote up the first paragraphs that I used, I made that change. That is all the conversation had with Mrs. Ballard. I believe I discussed with Mr. Ballard at that time preparing a new set of paragraphs, and other paragraphs which we had been using which were a little bit too gushy and emotional, they wanted toned down a little.

I have seen the book which is Government's Exhibit 139 for identification before. That is my record of hotels where we stayed and the price paid per room. The record shows that from November 2, 1939 until December 7, 1939, we were at the Hotel Washington, Washington, D. C. I remember clearly the receipt of the letter which is Government's Exhibit 106 and the receipt of the check, conversations about it, and instructions from Mr. Ballard to send the letter back acknowledging it, and receipt of the check from Mr. Ballard for me to cash. The letter was received in Washington.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

Exception No. 57

The letter, Government's Exhibit 106 (Count 9 letter), was offered and received in evidence.

Mr. Cannon: Objected to, if the Court please, as not being the best evidence; and on the further ground that it has no bearing on the issues in the case and could not be in furtherance or aid in the scheme set out in the indictment; also no proper foundation has been sufficiently laid for its introduction. May I add to that, furthermore, the communication is in no sense complete and does not purport to be. [249]

The Witness: I had nothing to do with writing the letter. I recall receiving this particular letter and I remember the receipt and the cashier's check. I kept it with similar checks received through the mail until I had accumulated some three or four hundred dollars worth. On that occasion it was more, being more like $1500 worth, and took them down to the cashier of the hotel and cashed the checks, having made a record of each check. I gave the money to Mr. Ballard.

The Court: It will be admitted in evidence, subject to the objection made by counsel. Exception allowed.

The Witness: Referring to the book (Government's Exhibit 139 for identification), between October 27 and November 2, 1939, we were at the Hotel Benjamin Franklin in Philadelphia. I had seen Government's Exhibit 105 for identification before on the date it bears. I also saw the original of

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

which this is a carbon copy. I have seen Mr. Ballard write many times and the signature on that exhibit is his, and I saw him write it, and the "P. B. Crouse" and "H. N. Rogers" are my signature and Mr. Rogers' signature. I saw all of them write it. Thereupon Government's Exhibit 105 was admitted in evidence. The original was not exhibited to Mrs. Ballard, but one of the signed copies was. The original was given to Mr. Woodard. The signed copy was shown to Mrs. Ballard in Los Angeles. I observed her apparently reading it. There was some discussion about it, and what was contained in it, and for the purpose for which it was to be used. Said

EXHIBIT 105

reads as follows:

"Los Angeles, California
"March 13, 1937

"Mr. E. H. Woodard
"742 S. Hill St., Room 418
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Woodard: [250]

"I desire to make this statement, concerning the matter we have been discussing, in the presence of yourself, P. B. Crouse and H. N. Rogers, the signatures of these parties being hereto affixed as witnesses:

"March 25, 1929. From that time on to November 1929 I remained in Chicago.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

"'At this time a business opportunity was offered which required my presence in Arizona to make a report on some mining claims, which proved to be worthless which I reported.

"'At the close of the Arizona investigation further work for the same individual carried me into California where I was shortly left without funds.

"'I returned to Illinois in November 1931 taking up my residence in Homewood, a suburb of Chicago. In May 1932 we moved to Chicago establishing our residence, where it has been ever since.

"'I remained in Chicago until October 1934 holding Classes which were open to the public in our home, in down-town Chicago, in Riverside, Oakpark and on the northwest side of Chicago.

"'In October 1934 Mrs. Ballard and myself started out giving ten day Classes all over the Country, the first in Philadelphia, then New York, Boston, Washington, D. C., West Palm Beach, and Miami, Florida, Dallas, Texas, Los Angeles, San Francisco, Seattle, and other places, returning to our home in Chicago at intervals. All of these Classes were announced by published leaflets showing thereon the name of G. W. Ballard, and that he wrote under the pen-name of Godfre Ray King.

"'In February 1936 the publication of the monthly magazine, the 'Voice of the I Am,' was

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

started at the [251] Sindelar Studios, 2600 S. Hoover Street, Los Angeles. The various issues of this magazine have carried to the entire Country advance information of our itinerary and future Classes.

"(signed) G. W. BALLARD

"Witness:

E. H. WOODARD
P. B. CROUSE
H. N. ROGERS"

The Witness: I have seen the picture which is shown to me. It is the picture of Mr. Frank Kelly. (Vol. 12, p. 1734.) He was a student of the "I Am" during the time I was with the Ballards. Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 104, a letter dated June 30, 1939.

I received while traveling a letter from Mrs. Kelly, possibly in Minneapolis or one of the towns between our trip from Los Angeles to Chicago. The letter was addressed to Mr. and Mrs. Ballard. I turned it over to Mr. Ballard, along with the rest of the mail received. He opened it but didn't read it, or discuss its contents with me. I heard of the death of Mr. Kelly. I had a discussion with Mr. Ballard concerning Mr. Kelly's death shortly after he died.

In April of 1939, Mr. Ballard informed the staff concerning the death of Mr. Kelly. After news of Mr. Kelly's death, I heard Mr. Ballard deliver a

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

dictation regarding Mr. Kelly's making his ascension six weeks after letters were received from Los Angeles setting forth the fact that Mr. Kelly had died. That was in Chicago. Mr. Ballard received a letter from Mrs. Kelly from Los Angeles. The letter was brought to my attention to read six weeks later at Chicago. I took it to Mr. Ballard and Mr. Ballard returned it and said it was very wonderful. That night it was read again to all members of the staff at a staff meeting. Mr. Ballard took it and Mrs. Ballard had it. After having read [252] the letter, there was some discussion between all of us and the staff generally as to whether or not Mr. Kelly had made the ascension. The first time Mr. Ballard discussed Mr. Kelly's ascension was in Minneapolis. That was after the letter from Mrs. Kelly had been received but before it was read. He said he didn't know whether Mr. Kelly had made his ascension or not and, therefore, for us not to write any reply to the letters received asking whether he had made it or not. That was after the letter was received from Mrs. Kelly but before it was read. It was two days after the letter from Mrs. Kelly regarding Mr. Kelly's ascension was read that Mr. Ballard made any comment regarding Mr. Kelly's ascension.

The Court: What did Mr. Ballard say?

The Witness: It was not supposed to be Mr. Ballard speaking.

Mr. Neukom: You only heard his voice?

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

The Witness: I heard him giving out the words as he read them coming from the letters of light coming to him in the dictation, and he said Mr. Kelly had made the ascension and explained the way in which he had made the ascension. He said he was speaking the words of Saint Germain, that it was Saint Germain speaking. Then he said, "This Blessed One has made the ascension and how wonderful it was," that the reason he made the ascension was his devotion to the light and the fact that each time when he heard the broadcast he would follow Mrs. Ballard's voice, "The Light of God never fails" three times, then he went on to explain that he was doing this when he died and made his ascension; that as soon as he finished saying that the third time he fell forward on his face and made his ascension.

Thereupon Government's Exhibit 140 (Picture of Mr. Kelly), so far as the photograph on the face thereof is concerned, was admitted in evidence. Mr. Neukom read from Exhibit 59, at [253] page 41, also page 34, of the March 1940 issue of "The Voice", also Exhibit 57, at page 26, the January 1940 issue of "The Voice", and from the "Magic Presence," Exhibit 4, at page 390.

The question of Mr. Kelly's death and the reported ascension were discussed because other letters had been received from other people asking whether the claims of Mrs. Kelly to the effect that he had made his ascension were true or were not

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

true. Furthermore, she was passing out copies of photographs of him claiming that he had made his ascension and they were worried about it, whether that was something that should be done or not. That is the reason Mr. Ballard was discussing it, though he hadn't read the letter from Mrs. Kelly.

I was at the Lanning class on January 10, 1937 conducted at Olive Hill in Hollywood. Mr. Ballard purported to give a discourse which was taken down in shorthand by Mrs. McClatchy. I was present during the whole of the discourse. The Ascended Master Jesus was speaking through Mr. Ballard. The discourse was taken in shorthand. I saw the instrument shown to me, Government's Exhibit 141 for identification, among the papers of the Ballards while I was with them. I can't say that I saw Mrs. Ballard work on this particular one or Mrs. McClatchy write it up. Mrs. Ballard was not present at the meeting. In many cases I have a recollection that the words there which were stricken out were the ones actually delivered orally by Mr. Ballard. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1759.)

My attention being called to the fact that in the third paragraph there has been added between the words "kind" and "come" in pen and ink "which occur", I can't recall whether Mr. Ballard in giving this Jesus morning discourse used the words "which occur". I can recall an occasion where there have been additions to what Mr. Ballard delivered on that morning. The word "that" after

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

"it is unfortunate that mankind do not understand——" has been added and to the word "do" has been added an "e-s", making [254] the word "does". I recall that the typewritten form was the way in which Mr. Ballard delivered it on that occasion.

Mr. Cannon: In other words—just for a point of inquiry—do I understand the witness' answer then to be that he remembers on that occasion in 1937 Mr. Ballard saying it the way it is in the typewritten form? Is that what I understand? Is that the correct interpretation of your answer?

The Witness: Yes. He habitually spoke that way.

Mr. Cannon: No.

The Court: No. Counsel is referring to this particular time.

The Witness: Yes, I noticed him on occasions—on that occasion where he used the same sort of grammar that he used on other occasions and made specific note of them.

Mr. Cannon: I object to it as being argumentative, if the Court please. It is not a matter of custom.

The Court: Counsel is referring to this particular document at this particular time. Do you remember Mr. Ballard using the words that are typewritten there on the typewriter—now, that is counsel's point—of your own recollection independent

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

of any custom or independent of anything that he might have done at some other time?

The Witness: Oh, no, I couldn't say that I do.

The Court: All right.

The Witness: The changes in the discourse are all in the handwriting of Mr. Ballard.

Mr. Neukom: I might state at this time, your Honor, that we do not believe that this was published.

Thereupon the court ruled that the instrument, Government's Exhibit 141, was admissible in evidence, but that there was no foundation for the witness to establish that he actually knew the changes were made, that it might have been that Mr. Ballard [255] saw it as it was written and said, "No, that isn't what I said. I am going to correct it now to absolutely portray what I did say." The instrument, itself, was thereupon admitted in evidence. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1764.)

I have been present when Mrs. Mundy and Mrs. Ballard had several discussions concerning discourses that appeared in the magazines. I remember one in particular at the Biltmore Hotel around December of 1938. The three of us were present. Mr. Neukom read from Exhibit 8, at page 503 (Ascended Master Light), and from Exhibit 6, page IX, of foreward (Ascension Master Discourses).

Mrs. Mundy said that she knew she took down the words of these discourses exactly as Mr. Ballard gave them; that she did not make any mistakes and, therefore, she could not understand why, when the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

discourses were prepared for printing, that they should be changed, the sentences rearranged and grammatical errors corrected, and she was very upset; that she couldn't see why an ascended master should say anything that needed changing. That is as nearly as I can recall. Mrs. Ballard ended the conversation rather abruptly with a statement somewhat to the effect that the discourses couldn't go out the way they were before being changed. I have observed that Betty Mundy was uniformly present when Mr. Ballard was giving discourses and taking them down in shorthand, and I have seen her later transcribing her notes.

There was an ascended master known as Ray-o-Light. The first time I heard a discourse purporting to come from that ascended master was at Yosemite in the summer of 1937 or 1938. There is an incident which occurred that helps me fix when a discourse first came from the ascended master Ray-o-Light. One of the members of the staff had purchased a flashlight that was called a Ray-o-vac flashlight, and they called it instead a Ray-o-Light flashlight, and they talked about that name, that is this member of the staff and Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and the rest of [256] the staff. Mrs. Ballard said that she believed there must be an ascended master by the name of Ray-O-Light, and the day after that one of the ascended masters dictated that there was indeed an ascended master by the name of Ray-O-Light, and described that this

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

ascended master Ray-O-Light was a great cosmic being in charge of the operations of the universe—I don't remember all the details—and then later we had a dictation by the ascended master Ray-O-Light. Mr. Ballard gave the dictations. That was the first I had heard of the ascended master Ray-O-Light.

There was an ascended master or mistress, Goddess of Liberty. I first heard of any dictation or staff dictation from that ascended master I believe in 1937 in New York. We had visited the Statue of Liberty prior to the appearance of that ascended master. Then there was a dictation from the ascended master Goddess of Liberty the next day. I had not heard of any dictation from that ascended master prior to that.

I am familiar with the signature of Betty O. Mundy. The signatures on a group of papers in Government's Exhibit 142 for identification is that of Betty Mundy. I have seen the particular report in that exhibit before, at or near December 31, 1938, in Mr. Ballard's room at the Biltmore Hotel. I have been present when the Ballards discussed with Betty Mundy her duty in connection with preparing reports of the proceeds realized from classes, either from the sale of books or from love gifts. Instructions were given as to getting the report off on time, how to send the drafts that went along with the report, and so on. I have seen her work on reports many times. She would on some occasions

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

hand the report to me to be mailed. I can remember occasions when I purchased the draft to go with the report. I remember when she would fold the report and put it in an unsealed envelope and I would go get the draft and she would give me the unsealed envelope and I would mail it to the Saint Germain Press, Inc., in Chicago. [257]

It was stipulated that the signatures on the reports in Exhibit 142 for identification purporting to be Betty O. Mundy's signatures, were in fact her signatures.

The Witness: I have on occasion supplied data in conjunction with her preparation of the reports in Exhibit 142 for identification.

Exception No. 58

Thereupon Government's Exhibit 142 for identification was offered and received in evidence and there was read to the jury summaries from these reports indicating amounts that had been received at the classes to which the reports referred.

Mr. Cannon: The only objection we make, your Honor, is that it does not tend to prove any issue in the case and therefore is immaterial.

Said objection was overruled and the exhibit admitted in evidence. Exception allowed to all defendants.

The Witness: The Ballards held fourteen classes in each of the years 1937, 1938 and 1939. They were held in many of the principal cities of the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

United States. I heard Mrs. Ballard say late in 1936 or early in 1937 that she was sure that Saint Germain would not allow the messengers to return to Dallas again unless their love gifts picked up and came in greater quantities. This was in Philadelphia on October 31, 1939, at the Benjamin Franklin Hotel; in a conversation at which Mr. Ballard, Mrs. Ballard, Betty Mundy, Grant Lewis, Frank Vonderhoya, myself, Mrs. Decamara, Miss Fairchild, Fred the organist, Alice Schutz, and Bob LaFevre were present, those persons being members of the staff. Mr. Ballard gave a discourse from Saint Germain, in which the part referring to this is: "I urge you don't let any urge of the students to cause you to give—go any longer to places where you can't make expenses." I made shorthand notes of it at the time.

After I cashed the checks, I would either give the money to [258] Mr. Ballard or else put it in his trunk with other sums similarly received. I have heard Betty Mundy on several occasions make statements in which she requested more information concerning money that was coming through the mail. Mrs. Mundy would state that Mr. Ballard had spent more than was reflected he had by the accounts in Chicago, and that that would "ball" up the bookkeeping there and the auditors wouldn't be able to understand why they should have spent more money than they were supposed to have on hand, and therefore she wanted something done about it.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

It was after one of those protests that I started keeping this record of checks, although no such use was ever made of it. That must have been in 1938 early in the year, probably in Chicago. I kept them on the form, of which you have a copy here, Government's Exhibit 143 for identification. When I disassociated myself with the Ballard movement, I sent the records I kept to Mrs. Ballard by express messenger. I had two or three sheets left. They were mixed up with some other papers. I turned them over to Mr. Van Meter or Mr. Callahan.

The date referred to on certain of the sheets in Exhibit 143 for identification was 1939. I find the check of $300 from Mr. Rogers referred to in Count 9 of the indictment on the first sheet, 11-29. That was a check that was received in the letter that came from Mr. Rogers that we identified this morning (Government's Exhibit 106). I cashed that $300 check at that time. Two of the sheets in Exhibit 143 were made by Bob LaFevre or Alice Schutz or Bertha Livingood, I can't tell which one now. I had handed to the parties I mentioned a group of checks for them to tabulate upon these sheets. I checked over the sheets to see if they tallied with the checks and found them correct, and then cashed the checks.

Exception No. 59

Thereupon Exhibit 143 for identification was offered in evidence. This exhibit was a photostatic

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

copy of the reports of checks received during the Washington class.

Mr. Peterson: On behalf of the defendants, objected [259] to upon the ground that they do not prove or disprove any issue in the indictment.

Said objection was thereupon overruled and the exhibit was admitted in evidence. Exception allowed to all of the defendants.

The Witness: The place given on the head of the check in that exhibit is the place whence the check came. M. and M. is Mr. and Mrs. Ballard; over the heading of "signed" is the person who drew the check. The figures represented on the exhibit were amounts in addition to the receipts reported by the report of Betty Mundy for the class in Washington as of that period. I have sometimes seen Mr. Ballard use money which was received immediately after it was given to him. I have seen him give Donald Ballard a hundred dollar bill out of money I gave him and put the rest in his trunk, and I have seen him take the money in his pocket and go out and pay for a dress for Mrs. Ballard from that money.

In addition to the fourteen classes that I have mentioned as held during each of the years related, Mr. and Mrs. Ballard from time to time appeared at group classes where gifts were received. Referring to the letter from Mr. Ballard, addressed to Harry N. Rogers, which is

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 144,

I recall mailing it at Mr. Ballard's direction. Thereupon said letter was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Hotel Cleveland
"Cleveland Ohio
"October 19, 1939

"Mr. Harry N. Rogers,
"353 No. Van Ness,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"My dear Harry:

"How tragic that you should be so deceived, or knowing, try to deceive me. We have copy of Catherine's [260] terrible vicious letter written to Mr. Stack in New York trying by her vicious lies to prevent our getting the Woman's Club there—lieing that she had resigned instead of being dismissed.

"Catherine went to the Hammond Organ Company in Los Angeles and tried to spread vicious lies there, but is not succeeding any place in getting anyone to believe them.

"You have been hoping and decreeing that Catherine come back into this Light and Groups. She will never come back in a thousand years. Saint Germain gave her the opportunity to be silent, which she refused to do, gathering students about her at the Cafeteria to try to injure us by her vicious lies. You

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

told me she was not doing this when you sat at the table with others at various times and heard her doing it. You cannot be loyal to the Light and do this. Don't ask me to ever again believe one word of good about either Catherine or Virginia. It is not in them.

"Vinton has not kept one word of his promises of which you told me.

"It is absolutely impossible for you to go on with your Groups with that treacherous creature in your midst. I am sure it is much better for you to close your Groups, until such time as you cut yourself free from such influence, if you should ever wish to do so.

"Don't blame people who dislike Catherine when they know the treachery she is practicing and that of Virginia.

"Saint Germain has brought into our midst a fine man to take your place in the Class and Radio Announcing.

"Ratana and Sindelars will take full charge of the coming Shrine Class. [261]

"You had the power in your own hands to stop all this viciousness in the beginning. What a pity you did not do it! Remember Harry how Saint Germain pled for two years to prevent this humiliation coming to you, and there is no one to blame but Catherine and Virginia. The great pity is those blessed children must suffer thru it *to*.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

"May the Light within you reveal the full Truth of this to you.

"Sincerely in the Light,

"G. W. BALLARD."

The Witness: I was not paid a salary while with the Ballards. I received $150 a month for the support of my family and expenses were paid as turned in. Most of the staff traveled about the country in the Chrysler cars and Mrs. Ballard and Mrs. Mundy, sometimes Mrs. LaFerrera and Mrs. Rogers traveled by plane.

Government's Exhibit 145 for identification is a group leader letter sent from Cleveland. That is reproduced by Multilith process at my direction and handled by myself. It was used in conjunction with the "I Am" movement. Looking at this exhibit, the part with blue, refreshes my memory as to dictation or statements made by Mr. or Mrs. Ballard at or near the time of the letter. I recall their statements at the time.

Exception No. 60

Thereupon

EXHIBIT 145

for identification was offered and received in evidence.

Mr. Peterson: To which we will interpose the general objection. (Lack of materiality.)

The Court: It will be so considered.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

Said exhibit was thereupon admitted in evidence, and reads as follows: [262]

"March 18, 1938.

"Blessed Students Everywhere

"You will be overjoyed to read this marvelous information which was dictated to the Cleveland Class by our Beloved Saint Germain on March 15, 1938.

"'Beloved sincere students of this Great Light, I have great rejoicing for you. Will those who are visiting here convey these exact words, at their earliest convenience, to the different parts of America?

"'On next Sunday there will be ten Ascensions! five from the Cave of Symbols in America and five from the Retreat in Arabia. The five from the Cave of Symbols are your own beloved American people. Those from the Retreat in Arabia come from five different countries; one from South America; one from Australia; one from France; one from England and one from India.'

* * *

"This is a tremendous thing! It is the only time in the history of the earth that this number of people will have made the Ascension in one day. Those from the Cave of Symbols will make the Ascension at 2:00 o'clock; those from the Retreat in Arabia at 8:00 o'clock in the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

evening. That will be your time here (Eastern Standard Time).

"'It is for the purpose, not only of their Freedom, but of releasing the Power which will act throughout the future Ascension day, as the Messengers carry the Light forth. This will be a living memory in the history of every "I AM" Student on the future Ascension Days at the close of each class.'

* * *

(Signed) "THE BALLARDS."

The Witness: I have heard the Ballards make comments with respect to the definite appearance of ascended masters at [263] future classes that were to be conducted. I have never seen at any classes that I attended the appearance of any ascended masters in their physical, tangible bodies. I have heard Mr. or Mrs. Ballard make statements why ascended masters did not appear. I remember specifically one in West Palm Beach, Florida, at the time Jesus gave a dictation to the staff there, in November or December of 1937. The statement was made that the ascended masters would not appear because people did not maintain harmony in their feelings and live up to the requirements of the one hundred per cent--what was later called the one hundred per cent requirements.

I know the defendant, Mr. Cassiere. He was not

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

a member of the staff. He was an appointed messenger. I have heard him make a remark with respect to love gifts he received at classes he attended, particularly at the Cleveland class. I believe we were in New York when we received a letter. I do not have it, but I read it and turned it over to Mr. Ballard for him to read and he turned it back to me for answer. With respect to love gifts he said "Cleveland is good pay". In a letter from Detroit, he said that the people there knew how to treat the love gift box. I remember a letter in which he said collections were very poor, but don't remember of what place he was speaking at the time.

I observed Mr. Cassiere come and receive instructions from Mr. or Mrs. Ballard on many occasions. I have seen Mr. Cassiere come and get an appointment to see Mr. Ballard, and Mr. Ballard and Mr. Cassiere have sat down in the same room where I was and have discussed Mr. Cassier'es work, the towns where he was to go, places where he was to give lectures, and some items as to what he would talk about and what he would not talk about. I have heard the same thing in respect to Mr. Stickell, a discussion of where they were to have meetings, what they were to say, what they were to presnt, and what they were to avoid presenting. On some occasions I was instructed to convey that instruction to [264] them.

I am married to the former wife of Donald Ballard.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

I have heard Mrs. Ballard state from the platform that they have cured people suffering from cancer. I was with the Ballards during virtually all the classes during the periods that I was with them, virtually every meeting they had. I have never heard anyone express verbally in the presence of Mr. or Mrs. Ballard that they were ever cured or healed of cancer. (Mr. Neukom read from Exhibit 104, page 3.) I was present during the Chicago class just prior to June of 1939 and I did not hear any person at that time state that they had been cured of cancer. I was with the movement when pictures of Mr. Ballard were offered for sale after his death. (Mr. Neukom read from the "Voice" magazine, February 1940 issue, Exhibit 58, page 35, and from the "Voice" magazine, November 1939 issue, Exhibit 55, at page 12, and from the "Voice" magazine, August 1939 issue, Exhibit 62, page 25.)

At a conversation at 2545 North Vermont, Los Angeles, in which Marjorie Ballard, Donald Ballard and Mrs. Ballard were present, Donald Ballard said that he didn't have to take anything from his mother because he knew that on the occasion which she had referred to on the platform saying that Jesus had in his tangible, physical body put His arms around her, that in fact that occurred during a dictation which Mr. Ballard received from Jesus and Mr. Ballard put his arms around Mrs. Ballard while he said, "This is Jesus saying, 'I am

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

now putting my arms around you,'" as he was giving her words of this dictation. He said that he had faced her with that and she was unable to make any answer to it. Prior to writing the notes on Government's Exhibit 146 for identification, I had a conversation with Mr. and Mrs. Ballard the latter part of 1939 at Chicago. They are my abbreviated notes regarding the telegram which I was told to send by Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, and that is what I wrote down as to what they told me to send. Thereafter [265] I prepared the telegram from those notes. The notes say I was to send one to Mr. Wall, Mr. Lee, and to Mrs. Ketcham, care of Mr. H. J. Bechtal, 116 North Narcissus. Mrs. Ballard said for me to send this wire to Mrs. Ketcham saying she was dismissed from the staff and from representing Saint Germain in any other way or from attending the study groups. She had been a former member of the staff. I prepared and sent such a telegram.

Cross Examination

By Mr. Cannon:

The Witness: I am 43 years old and was with the Ballards for three and a half years. We heard the statement made many times in classes about Jesus holding Mrs. Ballard in His arms. Donald did not say in class that his father had put his arms around his mother and said Jesus was there by enfolding her in his arms. Donald's mother had

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

made the statement that it was Jesus who put His arms around her in His visible, tangible body. That was made from the platform. Donald said in fact he knew that Jesus had never put His physical, tangible arms around his mother, but that the occasion to which she referred when she made that statement from the platform was an occasion that occurred during a dictation purported to come from Jesus in which Mr. Ballard had put his arms around Mrs. Ballard while he said the words of Jesus, "I am putting My arms around you." The conversation which I referred to was one in which Donald had faced his mother with the statement that it hadn't been Jesus, but rather Mr. Ballard who had put his arms around her. He referred when he was making his explanation, to the statement which Mrs. Ballard had often made from the platform that Jesus had put His tangible, physical arms around her and he said that that statement was not true and he knew it wasn't true, because he knew that that was an enlargement of the occurrence when Mr. Ballard was receiving a dictation from Jesus and put his arms around her and said it [266] was Jesus. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1831.) I don't know whether the conversation which Donald was referring to was held only in the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Donald. He didn't say anyone else was there.

Q. Did you quit this movement or were you fired?

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

A. I received word from other people that I had been dismissed who heard it announced at the class. Mrs. Ballard did not tell me on the night of March 27, 1940 that I should get out, that she didn't want to see me again. I recall on March 27, 1940, late in the evening at night, the lights being out, the door was opened and I was kneeling at Marjorie Ballard's bedside, she being unclothed and in bed, and the light was flashed on and I was kneeling on the side of her bed. At that time, I was married. I was not the house guest of Donald Ballard but I was living at the house on Vermont Avenue where Donald Ballard and his wife were living.

Q. And you were very much surprised when he came in, weren't you, and jumped up hurriedly?

A. No, I didn't jump up when he came in. I jumped up when he spoke at my side. Yes, I was surprised.

Testifying with respect to this same circumstance on December 20, 1940, I testified as follows:

"Q. Isn't it a fact that you told Donald the reason you ran was because you were embarrassed?

"A. I didn't run.

"Q. You didn't. Did you jump?

"A. I got to my feet quickly; yes."

Is that correct? A. Yes, I got to my feet quickly.

The Witness: I also testified as follows:

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

"Q. Isn't it a fact that you told Donald Ballard the reason you jumped was because you were embarrassed?

"A. Yes."

I was traveling around with the Ballards over the [267] country for a period of three and a half years. 10, 12, 15 people were in the group that went from city to city in these classes. Marjorie Ballard, who is now my wife, was sometimes in that group.

Exception No. 61

Mr. Cannon: And how long prior to the time of this March episode I last referred to had you been making love to Marjorie Ballard?

Mr. Neukom: Now, I object to that as assuming something not in evidence, and it is merely made for the purpose of attacking this witness.

Mr. Cannon: Absolutely, that is the reason.

The Court: Sustained.

The Witness: After this episode occurred, I still continued to believe in the teachings of the movement. One of the teachings of the movement that I had heard expounded at the time I was with it was that no male member should be alone in the room with any other female member not his wife, but if that ruling is countered by another requirement or other requests, that makes a difference. The other changes were that I was acting in the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

family there as a member of the family. I was an employee there acting in a trusted capacity, left there to act as a guard, and I was acting in that capacity on that night when I was in beside Marjorie Ballard's bed, and I was there trying to get her to go to class after she had had a quarrel with Donald and was not going to go to class, and there was nothing wrong about it. I was guarding the people in the house, and I was seeing to it that Marjorie was going to get to class on time instead of staying from class because of a quarrel with Don, as I had on several other occasions, and you try to make it out as something. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1836).

I attended practically every class during the three and a half years I was with them and I heard the statements by [268] Mr. and Mrs. Ballard from the platform with respect to the healings and the influence of this movement. I read thousands of letters that came in. Bearing in mind what I had seen and heard at these meetings and what I had read in those letters, I believed in the movement up beyond the date of my leaving. I believed with reservations in the efficacy of these calls made or decrees pronounced looking for certain blessings of the I Am Presence. The first time that the Ballards' own call for protection to their cars failed and the cars were wrecked, I began to doubt right then, that was in 1938. I expressed doubts in October of 1938 in Chicago. I told Mr. Ballard that so

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

many things had occurred in the way of contradictions in the dictations and Messengers themselves failing to carry out the requests made in the dictations that I had my doubts as to their authenticity. I still continued to answer these letters that came in asking for the call for persons who wanted to be healed, after there had been an adjustment made and I had been persuaded that my fears were groundless and that if I wanted to make my ascension I should cast all doubt and fear aside. I had a rehabilitation of my faith sometime in October. It continued until the next thing occurred which seemed to be absolutely unexplainable. I don't know just what it was. Another one that I explained to the Ballards is where Mr. Ballard received a dictation purporting to come from Saint Germain in which he instructed them under no circumstances to mention anything except the constructive things at the Washington class and not to mention the Government or the people in the Government or not to run down anything, and Mrs. Ballard followed that request of Saint Germain the first day of the Washington class, and then after that she abandoned it completely and ran down the Government and ran down Pelley, and Ham and Eggs, and the census takers, and the income tax, and everything else. Mrs. Ballard had been doing that right along. I still maintained my [269] faith in the movement with reservation, but with the reservation I was a sincere believer in the movement.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

When they asked me to answer the letters after Mr. Ballard took ill in Washington in 1939, I answered the letters with respect to healing in the same manner as theretofore and I had not lost confidence in the movement. I was under instruction that when I had these letters I would call to my own "I Am Presence" and to my Higher Mental Body to have the healing sent and the work done and taken care of. I was thoroughly sincere in that and did my best. I thought the Ballards were sincere with reservations, though no reservations as to my sincerity. Even though I felt I had some question as to the sincerity of the Ballards, I still did as I was told in sending out the letters. I hoped they would be efficacious in helping these people and I had been told they would, and I had been told that everything purported to be said by the people who said it was absolutely true and I was very eager to believe it and so I believed it. I actually talked to many people who claimed to be healed and I believed those people who told me that they had been healed and that they had been healed as a result of the movement. In letters, I heard a number of people say that they had been cured of what was generally regarded by medical people as incurable diseases. I did not believe the statements in the letters without reservation in some cases. The reservations were that the one case in which I ever saw any X-ray photographs was a case of ankylosis of the spine, and this case was reported as a case

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

where the patient had gone and had an X-ray picture showing ankylosis, then had attended a class and a couple of days later had had another picture taken and it showed that there was no ankylosis, and it was shortly after that picture was received that the statement was made that many cases like that had been cured, and they had X-rays to prove it, but in my own observation it appeared to me that the first photograph was blurred as though [270] the patient had moved during the exposure. Aside from that, that is the only reservation that I had as to my belief or lack of it in the truthfulness of the statements made in these letters. Nothing further. Everything came from the fact that we received very nearly an equal number of letters complaining that the student had done everything they had been told to do and had received no benefit, they hadn't received their healing. I was told by Mr. and Mrs. Ballard who were supposed to be in the position of Jesus Christ, and that every word that they said was absolutely true. I wanted them to be true. There was nothing on earth that I ever wanted so badly as I wanted those things should be true. And for three and a half years I kidded myself into believing it very effectively. I was actually living with them day in and day out and had the means available to me to observe their every action, and I saw them in the privacy of their own homes talking about the things that had been manifested to them, and I saw them arguing.

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

quarreling, fighting, doing all of the things that they said should not be done. I never saw such quarrels as went on between Donald and Mrs. Ballard. I never heard anyone curse the way he did. I never saw anyone give vent to temper in such a way, and eventually the weight of that evidence simply got so heavy that I couldn't believe that anybody that claimed to have all of the advantages they claimed to have could possibly have those things occur. It took me three and a half years to down my determination to prove that Jesus Christ was real, that God is real, and that we can live Christian lives here, but I didn't arrive at that conclusion, though, until sometime after I had been fired.

Q. As a result of the episode I have spoken of?

Witness: Your question doesn't make sense. The reason for my coming to the conclusion you mention was that I found out that Mr. Ballard, as well as the rest of them, were lying about [271] things which I had not known before. (Tr. Vol. 12, p. 1845). The lawyer of whom I spoke last night, the name Ashcroft sounds familiar. I am not a stenographer-reporter. I have my own short way of writing. A letter received in evidence as

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT U,

dated December 2, 1938, was dictated to me by Mr. Ballard. Said letter reads as follows:

"December 2, 1938

"A. M. Ashcraft
"800 Beacon St.,
"Boston, Mass.

"Blessed Student of the Light,

"Thank you so much for all the Love and Devotion expressed in your recent letter. We are so glad to know of your sincere appreciation of this work and your loyalty to it.

"In answer to your question about starting an activity to nominate us for public office we ask you to please under no circumstance think of any such thing. Saint Germain is the Director of this Work, and all our activities and if He were ever to wish such a thing done He must be the one to start it, not the students.

"Of course the same comment applies to any proposed small booklet ~~and any attempt~~ to interest or involve Ford, Hoover, Hughes or Morgan. Please do not feel it your duty or privilege to inaugurate any such activity. Such things, if desired by Saint Germain would most certainly be requested and started by himself.

"We rejoice with you in your wonderful Victory in calling forth the Perfection of the

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

Presence in connection with your eye-sight and we continue to call forth to you the release of Ascended Master Radiation and Light Substance, to make Its Perfection manifest in your life. [272]

"Our Love and Blessings enfold you always."

This letter was signed by Mr. Ballard and mailed to Mr. Ashcroft. Mr. Ballard didn't dictate it to me. He just told me to tell him no, don't make the book and don't propose us for office. I dictated the rest to a stenographer. The letter that he was answering referred to a victory the man had in connection with his eyesight being improved. Each time he would write, he would claim a victory. Three months later he sent $30.00 claiming he had received his healing, then six months later, he sent another letter begging the Ballards to work for his eyesight. The form paragraphs that we used in connection with healing letters were not taken from "The Voice" or from discourses published in the various books, but the principle of calling into play the "Mighty I Am Presence" was set forth in these form paragraphs. All of these form replies applies the principles that were discussed in "The Voice" and the various articles published in the books.

I had nothing to do with the financial setup of the reports heretofore referred to, gotten out by Mrs. Betty Mundy. They came to me for the pur-

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

pose of buying drafts to send to Chicago. I would send my only copy to Chicago. Those I had today I got from Mr. Neukom. The first time I saw them grouped together as Exhibit 142 was when Mr. Neukom asked me about them in preparation for the previous trial. These reports don't set out any expenses to which the movement was subjected. Mrs. Mundy kept the record as to expenses for hiring halls, et cetera. I didn't see them. The group that went with the classes from city to city numbered 12 or 13; their expenses were paid out of love gifts, sale of books, and things like that, including the rental of auditoriums. Sometimes a thousand people would attend the classes. The average amount contributed at these classes in love gifts would not be less than 8 cents apiece, though some were as low as that. Sometimes the expenses of conducting the classes was greater than the amount [273] received from love gifts. Mr. Ballard had a trunk in several drawers of which he would have batches of $100 or $200 bills, not primarily when they were on the road, but primarily after a large class like the Shrine class. Classes were conducted by the Ballards only. The groups had no financial tie-in with the Ballards, except through the sale of books and through love gifts that were turned back. The groups were not required to turn anything over to the Ballards, except that they paid for the books and paid for their transcription records, and so on. No dues or initiation fees were charged at the group

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

meetings. Classes were conducted on an itinerant basis. Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere also had classes. As far as Mr. Stickell's or Mr. Cassier's classes, they were independent of the Ballards financially as far as I know.

A letter came to Mr. Ballard from Mrs. Kelly concerning the ascension of a man by the name of Kelly. I first saw it in Minneapolis when it was first received. It was mailed to the Ballards from Los Angeles. Mr. Ballard opened it when it came but didn't read it for about six weeks. It was between the period of the receipt of the letter and the six weeks before Mr. Ballard read it that letters came from various students asking if Kelly really ascended. I asked Mr. Ballard about these inquiries, which was before he actually read the letter, and he said to wait until we had further word on it. In this letter, I recall that Mrs. Kelly said that prior to Mr. Kelly's ascension, he had regained his health. I think in that letter Mrs. Kelly said she was present when the ascension occurred. There was never any representation that the letters with the typewritten signature, "Saint Germain", were actually typed by Saint Germain. The representation was that Mr. Ballard had received the dictation through the letters of light. The first time that I saw Government's Exhibit 141 was when Mr. Neukom showed it to me. That is the particular document. I didn't keep a copy of it myself. [274]

(Testimony of Paton B. Crouse.)

Redirect Examination

I don't know whether Mr. Stickel and Mr. Cassiere retained all of their love gifts. They obtained the books they sold from the Saint Germain Press. Mrs. Terry is the mother of my present wife, the former Marjorie Ballard. At the time that the incident in March of 1940 occurred, in which I was in the room with my wife, Marjorie, Mrs. Terry was in the house right outside the door and the door was open.

MRS. MADGE KING

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I live in San Francisco and am employed by the Better Business Bureau of San Francisco, having been so employed for six years. I am employed as an investigator and in office work. In the course of my employment, about February 13, 1939, in San Francisco, I attended an "I Am" Ballard organization meeting. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Donald were there. I took notes at the meeting. The meeting started about 7:15, conducted by a young man in white. They sang songs out of a song book and ended it by the singing of the "Star Spangled Banner" and a large flag was brought on the stage and they all pledged allegiance to the flag. At 8:00 o'clock, a radio was brought on the stage and everybody listened to Mrs. Ballard give her radio talk

(Testimony of Mrs. Madge King.)

for about 15 minutes. Mrs. Ballard wasn't on the platform, it came over the radio. Then a young man gave a discourse explaining some kind of a chart they had and about a quarter of nine the audience said "Here, they come" and the Ballards came in. Mr. Ballard said that they were used to criticism, but they didn't have to worry about it as Saint Germain would take care of it. He said there was a man in New York who said he was going to expose their movement on the radio, but on the way to the radio station the automobile overturned and the man was killed. Then Mrs. Ballard [275] said they didn't enjoy going around the country combatting all of this, that they could make a good living from the printing press. Mr. Ballard then said, "No. We do it for you people and to save America. We sacrifice ourselves." Mrs. Ballard then said they had been criticised for dressing as they did, but they were entitled to all the jewelry, that they were the love offerings from people whom they had helped and if it brought happiness to them, the Ballards were entitled to them. She said Saint Germain wanted all the attending people to have these things and wanted them to go out and get them for themselves, and if they needed money, to use the money decree, that Saint Germain didn't like spineless creatures. Both Mr. and Mrs. Ballard said that they would have an important message for them that evening. I don't recall anything said about ascension. Mr. Ballard said that Saint

(Testimony of Mrs. Madge King.)

Germain had told them when they came back from Honolulu that they could ascend any time they wanted to because they had done such a marvelous work here, but he said they couldn't leave the good work and the people so they had decided to continue on. Then they gave decrees and the audience would join in some of them. Then about 11:00 o'clock Mr. Ballard said that "The Great Harmony" would give the message that evening, then he paused and closed his eyes, and looked up and started speaking in a rather deep voice and gave some sort of salutation to the audience and said: "A new book of songs has just been published on which is my likeness, and I want each of you to buy a copy of this and each night upon retiring before you go to sleep look at this likeness and it will bring you benefits of which you will never know." During the meeting they said they had saved San Francisco from three earthquakes and that if it weren't for them, many dire things would happen to America. Mr. Ballard said he would not say it would happen, but New York could have a disaster like they had had in South America. There was mention made of three airplanes carrying [276] subversive activities but that they had never reached this country and that the audience didn't know what became of them, but that they (the Ballards) did. When Mr. Ballard first started to speak as "The Great Harmony" his voice was deep, but gradually got back to normal. He didn't say at the

(Testimony of Mrs. Madge King.)

end of the discourse that "The Great Harmony" was off and he was on again. It ended about 11:30.

[277]

GLADYS ETHEL KEMP

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

I live at Alameda, California.

Government's Exhibit 148 for identification was marked. This was shown to the witness and she stated:

I sent the original of that letter to Mrs. Ballard through the mail.

("Count" 11) The witness testified that she received a two page letter dated September 9, 1940, together with a little announcement called "Special Notice," and that it came in an envelope bearing the name of the Biltmore Hotel with the name of Mrs. G. W. Ballard typed in, which envelope was postmarked Los Angeles.

This document was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 149

over the objection that the letter had no materiality to the issues involved in the case and that there was no proper or any foundation laid other than that the signature was Mrs. Ballard's. Exception was allowed.

(Testimony of Gladys Ethel Kemp.)

Said letter and enclosure read as follows:

"SPECIAL NOTICE

"Since writing the copy for the Notice of our Beloved Messenger's Records in the May "Voice," we have succeeded in securing a beautiful blue transparent, flexible material for making our phonograph records in the future, and because of the special healing quality and vibratory action of same it will add much to the value of these records.

"The new pressings of our Messenger's Records now being made and all pressings in the future of the instrumental and vocal records, [278] will be made from this new material.

"We know you will be happy to have these beautiful blue records as they carry a special healing radiation. We have been working on these for a long time and now feel they are perfected to the point where we can offer them to the public.

Please send orders for all phonograph records direct to the SAINT GERMAIN PRESS, INC., Los Angeles, Calif., P. O. Box 428, as all shipments in the future will be made from Los Angeles direct, instead of the Chicago office.

"Because of the increased cost of this special material, it will be necessary to increase the cost slightly. Prices will be as follows:

"All double faced records made from blue transparent material $3.00 each—Shipping charges extra.

(Testimony of Gladys Ethel Kemp.)

"All records now on hand made from the regular material will be sold at the prices as formerly quoted. $2.50 for double faced records—Shipping charges extra.

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD
AND DONALD."

The letter reads as follows:

"The Biltmore Hotel
"Los Angeles

"September 9, 1940

"Gladys Ethel Kemp
"110 W. Lomita Ave.
"Glendale, Calif.

"Beloved One of the Light: [279]

"Your registered letter of August 24th was duly received, but because of important duties to perform, it has been impossible to reply sooner.

"In going over our previous correspondence with you, I find that in our letters we stated the Law very clearly, but as you know we never give advice, or tell others what they should do, other than to call the Law into action, I made the call on a number of occasions for the boy's release, and for his own Higher Mental Body to put him where he belongs, and that Perfection manifest to all concerned. I do not know personally whether his place is with you, or with his parents, but I do know that having called the Law into operation, and holding

(Testimony of Gladys Ethel Kemp.)

Harmony in the feeling world, that Law would have to operate for both him and all others concerned.

"Regarding my furnishing you with money to go into court to press this matter, wish to state that I never made the statement that the money coming in from the Love Gifts was reserved for such purposes. I have stated many times that all money coming in belonged to Saint Germain, and would be used for the Expansion of the Light, but there has never been any provision made by Him that this money could be used for individual's personal use.

"The 'I AM' School is an independent activity, and in no way connected with this activity financially, nor would it be obligated to furnish money for such a condition.

"If you are a real 'I AM' Student, and have attended the Classes, then you must know the Law concerning [280] the release of finances—that you cannot look to persons, places, conditions or things, but you must call to your 'Mighty I AM Presence' to release it from the Perfect channel it desires, and if you will stand unwavering without fear and doubt, you will find that coming forth.

"I call the Infinite Powers of Light into action to flood your being and world with an abundance of every good thing, to charge you with Happiness, Peace, and Victory's Victories and

(Testimony of Gladys Ethel Kemp.)

Miracles of the Light, eternally sustained and ever-expanding.

"Sincerely in the Light

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

There was no cross examination.

EVELYN M. BROWN

was called as a witness on behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

I was at one time an I Am student. In September or October of 1940, Inspector Van Meter supplied me with about $3 and I sent the money to the Saint Germain Press, Los Angeles Branch, requesting a blue phonograph record. In a few days I received a package containing the phonograph record —on one side marked "Invocation, Mr. G. W. Ballard," and on the other side "There is no Death, Mr. G. W. Ballard."

Said package was received in evidence as Government's Exhibit 150 and the phonograph record itself marked "Exhibit 150-A."

I received this package through the mail. Prior to the purchase of this record I had purchased a set of books.

(Testimony of Evelyn M. Brown.)

Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 64, the August, 1940 issue of "The Voice" at page 39. [281]

PORTIA A. TERRY

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

I live at Sierra Madre. I am the mother of Marjorie Crouse, who was formerly the wife of Donald Ballard. I am acquainted with Mrs. Ballard, Donald Ballard, William Cassiere, Paul Stickell, Louise Majerus and Betty Mundy. I became a member of the Ballard movement in June of 1935, at which time I was married to Dr. Terry and living with him at Long Beach. At that time my daughter was married but later became divorced and returned to live with me. At that time she was married to Clem Clark. In the middle of 1936 I received a telephone call from Mrs. Ballard. At that time Donald Ballard, Marjorie, my husband and myself were together and Mrs. Ballard said on the phone that she wanted us to come into Los Angeles as a royal visitor had been to their apartment and she had a message for us. She also spoke to Donald and Majorie. Thereupon, Donald, Marjorie and myself went to the hotel where the Ballards were staying. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard were there and told

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

us that Saint Germain had been there and commanded that Donald and Marjorie get married at once. I replied that Marjorie's divorce would not be final until December. Mr. Ballard said "We will have to wait." At that time Donald had been living with us for three or four months. I noticed when Mr. Ballard made the statement about Saint Germain that from Don's facial expression he was quite happy, and when I said that Marjorie could not get married immediately, Mr. Ballard looked puzzled and was perplexed. (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 1907.)

Motion was made by the defendants to strike the foregoing testimony of Mrs. Terry beginning with the statement of the witness that Mrs. Ballard had asked them to come to her hotel on the ground that no charge is contained in the indictment [282] on which this testimony would have the slightest bearing and hence it was incompetent. The motion was denied and exception taken.

The Witness: In December of 1936, Donald and my daughter were married. At a Ballard meeting in December of 1937, Donald, Marjorie and I were in the audience and I noticed Donald and Marjorie struggling and Marjorie holding Donald's hand. I asked what was the trouble and Marjorie said that Donald wanted to jump to his feet and shout to the audience that the work was a fake. Marjorie succeeded in restraining him. I went home with Donald and Marjorie that evening and Donald related that Marjorie should have permitted him to have done

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

so and then it would be settled and over with; that he was tired of taking a back seat to Mr. and Mrs. Rogers.

In December of 1938, in Oakland, I was present when Mr. Ballard was purportedly delivering a discourse to the staff from Saint Germain, which discourse referred to Donald. The staff was present and I was called in and Saint Germain was admonishing Donald for something and Don started to defend himself saying it was not true, and Saint Germain, in a very loud, cross voice, told him to **"shut up."**

I have heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard state that Jesus had held them in his arms. She said that Jesus looked just the same as the pictures of Jesus; that he was there in his physical, tangible body. Later, Donald said that he and his mother had never seen an ascended master. Many times the Ballards said that the ascended masters appeared to them in their physical, tangible, physical bodies. I discontinued the Ballard movement in about March of 1940.

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 30, page 3, October, 1937 issue of "The Voice."

Sometimes I got letters from Marjorie and Donald. [283] Generally, these letters were shown to Marjorie and to me.

One such letter was shown to Mrs. Terry and she said that that letter was given to her by Donald

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

on or about the date it bore; that the handwriting was that of Mrs. Ballard.

Exception No. 62

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 151,

over the objection of the defendants that no foundation was laid, aside from the handwriting of Mrs. Ballard, particularly that no source had been shown, and on the further ground that it was a letter of a highly personal nature and had no bearing on the issues of the case. Exception was allowed. Said letter reads as follows:

"New Weston Hotel
"New York City
"May 1, 1937

"Dear Donny:

"Your letter to Daddy has hurt him beyond all words. I am writing to try and show you what you have done by making a written record of that discord by your own Life energy in your world.

"Daddy says he will never write you again and never step foot in your home. When he finished reading your letter, he was just speechless. Then he said: Something has died within me. He says he will never have anything to do with you again.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"Saint Germain was so shocked when he read your letter that he is considering a very serious move concerning you. I am sending you this letter to make a last effort to bring you to the realization of what you have done, for it is more serious than you understand, when you say the [284] things you did in that letter to Daddy.

"Last month we paid out $1200.00 for you and overdrew the bank account $900.00. That is never going to occur again. I sent a check for $500.00 to Barker's for the piano, I gave you $150.00 for the rent, $150.00 for school and you have had $100.00 a week beside that for four weeks. Since you got the car in December which is five months, you have had $11,000.00.

"It is not a matter of what anyone wants to do in this matter, it is a matter of what we have to do. Daddy says the end has come between you and him and he will not have anything more to do with you, after all the effort we have made to give you everything you wanted for Marjory and the home. You have had more than $7,100.00 since Jan. first and that will not pass for income tax approval. You are only eighteen years old and there are things that are right and things that are not right.

* * * * *

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"Miss McLatchy sent me a copy of your talk at Mrs. Woodard's the last two Sundays. Please know Donny Dear that the pledge that the 100% groups are to sign has been inspired and made necessary by the call of the students for the tangible Presence of one or more of the Ascended Masters. The Great Divine Director brought it about because of certain Inner work He wants to do for the protection of America. Only those who are willing to fulfill those requirements are strong enough to do the work that must be done. Therefore, you have made a serious mistake by talking against the promise one takes to his own 'I AM PRESENCE." [285] Those pledges are not to any human being. They are to help everyone who is to render this service to keep a strong check on himself and maintain obedience to what is required.

"Please make this correction before the group you spoke at if you want to right yourself with Saint Germain and the Divine Director in order to have Their Help farther. This thing must not go on in our work. Remember everyone is giving free will to sign or not and if some are not strong enough as yet, please do not let them influence you to be jealous of or criticise that which the Divine Director has approved and brought about Himself because of the need. This is a serious thing in our work and must stop.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"We have had tremendous accomplishments here in New York and a most amazing response from the people. No greater Love could mankind show than the students have given to us and that ought to make you realize that you should appreciate it too. When you write a letter with the feeling in the last one, there can never come out of it anything but unhappiness to you. Do not ever do that or say such things again, if you expect protection, supply or any happiness in your Life again.

"Please make your peace with your Presence and Saint Germain before it is too late to remedy it in this embodiment. I hope you will not waste all that I have tried to do for you in this Lifetime, not to mention what Saint Germain and Daddy have done. May you be strong enough to right your mistake forever before it is too late and never make another one.

"May your own 'I AM Presence' show you the [286] Light and give you the Strength to conquer your human self now and forever.

"Good night, in the Love of the Presence,

"MOTHER."

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 29, page 8, the September, 1937 issue of "The Voice" and from Government's Exhibit 15, page 10, the July, 1936 issue of "The Voice."

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

The Witness: During the period that Donald was married to my daughter from December of 1936, to August of 1940, I did not know of him to engage in any other work other than his work in connection with the Ballard movement.

A letter dated August 6, 1937, signed "Mama and Daddy," addressed to Donald and Marjorie, was marked for identification as Government's Exhibit 152. The witness stated that the first two pages were in the handwriting of Mr. Ballard; that the third page was by Mrs. Ballard, all but the postscript which was by Mr. Ballard; that the letter was handed to her by Donald and Marjorie.

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 152,

except for that portion at the bottom line of page 3 and continuing to the red brackets appearing about the middle of page 4. Said letter reads as follows:

"Hotel Gowman
"Seattle
"Aug. 6, 1937

"Our Dear Don & Marjorie:

"You precious ones, Find enclosed $100.00 try to make this last until the 15th of Aug. so as not to change the records in Chicago.

"Your check for $300.00 for the month Aug. 15 to Sept. 15 expenses will reach you on the

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

15 or 16. You need not keep record of this one hundred. [287]

"We had wonderful trip through, perfect weather, marvelous class in Portland last night. Arrived here at 1 P. M. today. Mr. Gowman inquired for you, sends his love and blessings.

"Had nice shower coming in today and had marvelous wild blackberrie pie at the French place beyond Tacoma. Brought Mammia and Betty one with us.

"All are fine as frog hair in a mill pond. I will write Mrs. Sindelar so she will be sure she is to go with her beginners. The church activity has nothing to do with the other activities already established there.

"Be sure to send Mammas tube rose Ryrin paint she paid for and ordered sent to your home when we left L. A. It must be there now.

"Our deepest love and blessings to you both, ever enfolding you in Its perfect radiance.

"MAMMA & DADDY."

Page 3.

I had just finished my letter when your letter arrived. I just had the application notarized and enclose it. We cannot change the arrangements in Chicago. I am enclosing $100.00 this take care of things and the checks come in to you as usual. Do not send in more receipts than

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

the $300.00. Don't make any reference to the money I send outside of the $300.00 check.

(The next portion is deleted in original letter)

"Will be in Spokane Wed. night 25th. Many Glaciers Hotel in Glacier Park. Thursday night 26th & 27th—Sat. night 28th & 29th. Old Faithful Inn, [288] Yellowstone Park. Tuesday night 31st Casper, Wyoming, Henning Hotel. Wed. night Sept. 1st, Cheyenne, Wyoming, Plains Hotel. Thursday night Sept. 2, Denver, Colo. Cosmopolitan Hotel. Will write you further details of bal. of trip.

"Love & blessings,

"MAMMA & DADDY."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 153

was received in evidence.

This letter, Exhibit 153, was received by Donald, Marjorie and myself at my home. It is in the handwriting of Mrs. Ballard. The "R. T." referred to in this letter is Roy Terry, my husband. I was divorced from him at that time.

Said letter reads as follows:

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"Belmont Plaza
"Lexington Avenue at Forty-Ninth Street,
"New York

"Mon. Nov. 13, 1939

Precious Darlings, Don, Marjie, Portia and Louisa:

"Your letter received and I am send you the enclosed checks to cover the bills you sent; but dear ones, if we are going to pay those bills for you under an emergency for heaven's sake send them, so we can get the benefit of the discount which they always allow, if paid within 10 days.

"As you see by this letterhead, Papa, Frank and I are in N. Y. getting Papa's teeth fixed because since he has grown so much thinner his teeth need refitting and it is taking until the end of this week to do it. We had the most marvelous class in our history and when we closed last night the love was so great the entire audience kneeled to the Light as we came in. I thought my heart would burst with [289] the outpouring of Light to the students and the desire to help them. There never was a class like it and Saint Germain said it was the most successful class of all so far as their work was concerned.

"We three left early by plane this A. M. & came up here to get the dental work attended to before the next class begins.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"Saint Germain said all classes in the future would be closed and there would be not published notice of when or where they were to be held. He is going to tighten up everything and weed out every atom of discord in the student body, until they are prepared to receive the manifestations for which they have been calling. Please let us know when you are moving and where to send your check of the 15th.

"How are things progressing for Portia? Tell her not to worry about her channel of supply—It does not depend on R. T.'s insurance!

"I command 10 times more than he has ever had or seen to be given Portia right now as her own individual channel of which no one knows but her Presence! I command this to come forth instantly and become physically manifest as I write these words. Everybody keep harmonious and happy and it will come about sooner than you think.

"Everybody visualize a definite amount & release into Portia's pocket-book this moment.

"We are all working steadily for you all; but everyone must positively refuse to have any unkind feeling or criticism of each other or those [290] who are also climbing the *the* hill to make the grade of the Ascension too.

"I had no sleep last nite so must close and get a little now. Daddy and the Staff all send you Love, Protection & Blessing constantly.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

See the 'Sword of Blue Flame' moving before you everywhere you go. With my heart enfolding you forever, Lovingly,

"MAMA, DADDY & ALL."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT No. 154

was received in evidence.

This letter bore the signature of Mrs. Ballard and it is in her handwriting. It was mailed to my home.

Said letter reads as follows:

"Belmont Plaza,
"Lexington Avenue at Forty-Ninth Street,
"New York.
"Nov. 16, 1939

"Precious Ones:

"Your wire came this A. M. and I am enclosing your 300.00 allowance check but I do not know how your house rent nor tuition at the flying school stands. I have asked you several times when you expect to move and what months the 400.00 rent check I sent you from Washington or Phila. paid for. Please state plainly when your rent at the Ulel home begins and whether or not you have paid your last month's rent at Mr. Harker's. Give me this definitely and don't hedge. I am carrying all I can stand and am trying to release Jesus & Nada's Songs for the Shrine Class.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

"Don't run up any more such telephone bills as that last one. It is ridiculous and we simply [291] cannot stand anything more of that kind.

"We have not yet been able to release the cars to come west on and Papa needs help in every way now more than ever in his life and I cannot sacrifice his peace of mind any longer. Stay within your allowance this month strictly. Let me know about your schooling. We will be here I think until Sunday nite and you had better drop me a line here.

"I have worked and worked for everybody, until I could drop in my tracks. So far everyone has come out O.K. but I would like one breath at least before something else lands to be taken care of. Do not fail on your protective work once and don't give Portia anything more to handle. Give Portia & Louisa our Love and a whole lot for your own dear selves. Papa and Frank send theirs too.

"Lovingly,

"MAMA."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 155

was written in evidence, with the exception of that portion starting with the last two words on the front page and including eight lines on the second page.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

Said letter reads as follows:

"Hotel Washington
"Penna Ave. at 15th Street
"Washington, D. C.
"Nov. 28, 1939.

"Precious Darlings:

"Enclosed is check for $200.00 for your Christmas spending money. One hundred of it is for each of you, so be good little darlings and divide it evenly. [292]

"You will have returned by the time this arrives and I trust everything will be harmonious and Perfect.

"Yesterday we sent you, % of Portia at Sierra Madre, a permit from Daddy and the Foundation to drive your blue car which was bought in Daddy's name.

(The next portion is deleted from original letter)

"Please sign that paper and return the carbon for our file and Foundation records. It has already been notarized by the notary here, so keep it on you or in the car; and it also gives you authority to drive any other cars of the Foundation too. Then any time you are protected. Take good care of Portia and just as soon as I arrive, I will give her a treatment.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

Give her and Louisa all our Love and enough for yourselves to give you your Ascension.

"Lovingly,

"MAMA."

This letter was received through the mail. It is in Mrs. Ballard's handwriting. This letter and also Government's Exhibits 153 and 154 were addressed to Mr. and Mrs. Donald Ballard. The treatments referred to therein to be given by Mrs. Ballard to me were such as I had received before. They consisted of Mr. Ballard standing up and rubbing his hands down my spine. Mrs. Ballard would treat me by standing up and giving a command or a decree. I had received these treatments on and off from the time I was in the movement.

The witness identified Government's Exhibit 75 for identification as bearing Donald Ballard's signature. Said document was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 75. [293]

Said letter reads as follows:

"Saint Germain Press

"Post Office Box 1133

"Chicago, Illinois

"Nov. 21, 1934.

"Dear Mr. Sieber:

"In your recent letter to Mr. Erickson you requested the immediate shipment of a quantity

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

of books. As you know I am handling much of the business for Mother and Dad and will be doing so during the time they are away. Therefore, your request was turned over to me. I have received instructions to retain all remaining copies of the first edition for filling the orders for the Chicago area as we have less than fifty books left. However, the second edition is due off the press shortly. I hope to have a quantity on hand within three weeks at the latest. This may seem a long time to wait but under the code regulations of the N.R.A. the printers can only work so fast. Besides this I shall also communicate immediately with Mother and Dad to see if there is any way in which I can rush the requested order of a part of it to you.

"In the above I have stated the situation concerning the books as it stands and you may be sure of my fullest cooperation. From your letter I suppose that you and Helen Smith have formed a committee for handling the business end and bookings of the class and book activities which will be a great help to Mother and Dad as they have all they can do. I would appreciate it if you would write me as to the exact form and activities of the committee so that I can [294] turn over to you all helpful information without delay.

"In spite of the fact that this was supposed to be a business letter I would like to send my personal greetings to your wife and your son

(Testimony of **Portia A. Terry.**)

Harry and I hope to come down East and see all the friends of the first ten day class within a few weeks.

"With all the love, power and success of the I Am presence.

"DONALD BALLARD."

Cross Examination

The Witness: I have been over my testimony several times with the United States Attorney and the Post Office Inspectors. At the time Mrs. Ballard talked to me about Don and Marjorie marrying, Don was about 18 years of age and Marjorie was 7½ years older. I was enthusiastic about the Ballard movement and serious in it and my enthusiasm and sincerity did not begin to wane until after Mr. Ballard's death and up to March of 1940. When the episode happened at the Shrine Auditorium when Donald wanted to get up and as he said, "expose the work," I was confused, but in my own mind I covered it up. Present, beside Marjorie, Donald, the Ballards and myself, at the staff meeting when Donald was told to "shut up," were Betty Mundy, Frank Vonderhoya, Mary Ketcham, Harry Rogers, Catherine Rogers, Virginia LaFerrera, Vinton LaFerrera, and others I don't recall. I knew at that time that Donald was correct in his defense. I don't remember what it was but I knew it was true, that is, his defense. What he said didn't have anything to do with what had theretofore been

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

said on the platform as to the appearance of the ascended masters. Though this caused me to check up things in my own mind as to the merits of the movement, I continued to be serious in my advocacy of the movement. Prior to Mr. Ballard's [295] commenting on Exhibit 153 as to R. T.'s insurance, I had talked to her about the situation and she had said not to worry.

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT V

was received in evidence and the witness testified she sent that telegram to the Ballards on or about the date it bears.

Said telegram reads as follows:

"Sierra Madre, Calif.
"Nov. 7, 1939

"Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Ballard,
"Hotel Washington,
"Washington, D. C.

"Help us make call Roys Secretary let insurance lapse one day Attorneys working on technicalities Love—

"PORTIA."

Among the things discussed from the platform was that you could get help from others in calling for assistance of the I Am Presence, in addition to asking it yourself.

I knew Don and Marjorie had a regular allowance out of Chicago but I didn't know how much.

(Testimony of Portia A. Terry.)

I am not real sure that the allowance was coming from Chicago. (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 1967.)

Redirect Examination

I never knew how much over and above his allowance Donald received.

ELSIE BUCKINGHAM PINKERTON

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 1969.)

Direct Examination

I live in Toledo, Ohio. I attend Toledo University. I am a senior. My parents and sisters were followers of the Ballard movement. In 1935, in Toledo, I had a conversation with Donald; my sister Audrey was present. We had attended a meeting of the I Am movement and the meeting was over. The [296] meeting had been in the ballroom of the Hotel Waldorf. At this time Donald motioned to some people who had congregated around Mrs. Ballard, congratulating her on her class, and stated: "How much longer are those people going to swallow that stuff."

Cross Examination

I was about 15 or 16 years of age at the time of this conversation with Donald in Toledo. He was about 17.

HELEN M. PINKERTON

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

I have four daughters. Elise is my eldest. I met the Ballards at Miami in a class in February of 1935. I left the movement in September or October of 1937. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Mrs. Mundy stated that the two books "The Magic Presence" and the "I Am Discourse" in which Mr. Ballard related his experiences with the Ascended Masters, would soon come off the press, that is, he said that as to "The Magic Presence." As to the "I Am Discourses" he said they were given to him in their home in Chicago in the audible voice of the Master. We attended a movie with the Ballards and Mrs. Mundy and Max Gysi in which a panther was shown and Mr. Ballard commented that that was exactly the way it was in "The Unveiled Mysteries." I believed in the authenticity of these experiences and in the truth of the representations made by the Ballards regarding the receiving of the I Am discourses. I purchased sets of the books from the Saint Germain Press, Inc. We had at least six complete sets. We had three or four subscriptions to the magazine "The Voice." My husband, myself and my mother and the three eldest of my children read these. The reason we had individual sets was because Mrs. Ballard said that each set contained the individual's own vibrations and no one else

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

should touch the individual's books. We also bought music sheets, decree books [297] and charts. An individual chart of the I Am Presence was framed in each bedroom. In Miami I asked Mrs. Ballard if she would ask Saint Germain if I could start a class in Toledo and she said she would ask him. Thereafter she said that Saint Germain had not contacted them but she and Mr. Ballard thought it would be quite all right if I started a class with my husband. Thereafter we started three classes in Toledo and sold books from the Saint Germain press. We paid the regular price for these books. In September of 1935, the Ballards gave a class in Toledo after which we were supposed to receive a 30% discount on the books but we did not actually accept it but sent the full price. In Miami, at the class, Mrs. Ballard gave us the law of precipitation as the very natural law of being and that every individual could precipitate whatever he needed. At one of these classes Mr. Ballard stated that a picture in the Ballard's home had been precipitated by two elderly ladies in Chicago who had precipitated it some years before he, Mr. Ballard, met Mrs. Ballard. Later I visited the home of the Ballards in Chicago and Louise Majerus showed us through the first floor and the basement where the Saint Germain Press was located. We were shown the dining room where the discourses were given. Mrs. Majerus explained where each would sit and how the light ray would come through the

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

windows. When the Ballards gave their Toledo class in September of 1935 they took up a collection of love offerings and retained the full amount thereof. The Ballards also sold books that they had brought. At a Miami class the Ballards stated that a tidal wave had been averted on the Eastern coast; that the Mighty I Am Presence had saved the Eastern coast from this tidal wave. I attended classes in Los Angeles, Detroit and Cleveland. I contributed love gifts of about $20 to $35 for a ten day class. I did so because the Ballards had said time after time that if the students [298] released money they also released blessings and that the money into whose hands it would pass would be helped. While attending the Shrine Convention in Los Angeles I had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard at the Figuerora Hotel in which Mrs. Ballard accused my husband and myself of commercializing the I Am. She also said our house was full of tobacco entities which were vicious and dangerous and when I went back to Toledo I should take all my four children and leave my husband. She said unless I did so all my children would die, starting with the youngest. My husband was the vice-president of a tobacco company in Toledo.

Cross Examination

I met Mrs. Bliss when I came to California to these get-togethers. I am also acquainted with Mrs. Maude Hill. I hardly know Mrs. LaFerrera. I have

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

not talked over with them the subject matter of my testimony. Well, we probably had a conversation. We talked about it (the testimony) but not numerous times. I talked to an United States Attorney last year and this year and to a Mr. Casey, a Post Office Inspector in Toledo. I entered the I Am movement early in March of 1935 and left in October of 1937. I did not, upon returning to Toledo from the Shrine class, leave my husband. When Mrs. Ballard said that my children would die if I did not leave my husband, my understanding of the teachings had a blow at that time and I could not begin to believe such a thing. I did not believe in the leader any longer. That was the first time I began to doubt the Ballards' leadership or the quality of it. (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 1993.) I continued to conduct my classes however because I did not want to let down the students whom I had encouraged to join the organization. I was taught that the matter of acquirement of things depended upon the call that I would make for perfection through my Highty I Am Presence; that the Mighty [299] I Am Presence was a storehouse of Perfection. That the light around our presence held the gift of every good thing because it was the constructively used energy that we had used through all our embodiments, waiting to be poured out to us if we could just make the call and become harmonized. The Ballards said that they would never ask a penny of a living soul but that the love boxes were in the

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

outer hall for our use. I don't remember anyone asking how much we gave. I never told the Ballards how much I gave. As to whether the envelopes were sealed or not I don't know. I did not get a chance to talk to the Ballards very often but they never snubbed me. I gave the love offerings because I was so joyously happy that I understood the I Am teachings that if I had had a million dollars and could have spared it I would have passed it into the work. I wrote the letter dated February 11, 1935.

Said document was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT W.

Said document reads as follows:

"Feb. 11th on the train

"Dear Beloved Messenger of Light:—

"Sunday night I was depressed—the selfish human sense of loss was hard for my I Am to conquer. But by dawn, I was again above all human concepts, and the soul of me was glad and then my glorious 'I AM' gave me a poem of thanksgiving, which you will find enclosed. It doesn't rhyme, but it is beautiful just the same. I could have written poetry for an hour there was so much to be thankful for.

"Darlings you gave, gave, gave—your time, strength, love and inspiration and a flood of appreciation for all these priceless jewels is flooding [300] my heart and soul. My poem of

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

course was inspired by the poem you read to us from the Magic Presence. I think it is the most soul-stirring poem in the world! I can hardly wait to receive my new book and the discourses.

"My dearest dears, now that we all belong to St. Germain's own family, won't you please know that all our hearts beat as one for the noble cause for which you and Mr. Ballard are giving your All. For did not Jesus say, 'where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst?' And now there will be three of us giving devotion to the one I Am.

"I am getting so much out of the Jesus Discourses which I have been reading once or twice a day. She and Mother will be so overjoyed to receive their copies. The train is so shaky that I hope you can read this. I have been holding so strongly to the I Am since I left Miami this morning, and it gives one such a calm assurance of the ultimate victory.

"You darlings have let me get so close to you personally, and the glory in such contact is beyond all human feeling! Even when I tried to feel the awe and humility due my teachers —both of you would gather me close enough to feel your heart beats, and I'd feel transfigured as if bathed in violet flame. God bless you, dearest dears, and may the glorious day come to pass when you can be our honored guests and

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

give your pure radiation to our blessed family.

"With my love I enfold you, & with the Blessings of the Great I Am Presence I caress you. [301]

"Beloved Messengers of the Light.

"Your 'Unveiled'

"HELEN."

After my daughter had the conversation with Donald that she testified to, that same evening she told me about it. Thereafter I wrote a letter dated October 18, 1935.

Said document was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT X.

Said letter reads as follows:

"My Blessed, adorable Ballards!

"Of course this letter is a bit late, but lets hope its all the sweeter! I remained home tonight from a big Chemical Convention dinner, in order to write you dear ones, blessed Margaret, and dear Maude.

"Time flies by so rapidly when one is happily busy from six a. m. until mid-night each day, but somehow I don't seem to require much sleep any more.

"I am now engaging my Swedish laundress to do my cleaning, also, thus giving my maid lots of time to care exclusively for the baby. This will give me the time I require for 'I Am'

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

letter-writing, and healing work, and visits of advice with the students.

"The Radiation in my head is so strong at this point, that it is as if the Light was streaming thru into my body.

"Beloved Messengers, our students want me to thank you again and again for the glorious lecture you gave us—a lecture inspiring each and all the 350 present, with renewed life and vitality, giving them higher ideals to live up to, and charging them with the magic powers of the Mighty 'I Am' Presence!!!

"Glorious-nearly-Ascended-Beings of the Light! ask Blessed Saint Germain if you could give us a ten-day-course between December first and January first? We are asking the Mighty 'I AM' Presence to bring you back to us for ten exhalted lectures, (or maybe 20), and when a goodly number of students do this earnestly, it is apt to accomplish wonders!!! The Washington class closes on December first, and the Los Angeles class opens on January first, so we are praying that Saint Germain will ask you to give us a full class here during that interval. Miracles do happen and you want us to believe in the Miracle-working Presence.

"I had a strange experience at the last Wednesday night class. I had asked the 'I Am' to give me more time, since I had so

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

much splendid material to give them, but the answer was—'eight to nine-thirty as usual.' Then to my amazement, I broke thru the Veil into the timelessness of the Great Silence, and was able to give my students twice as long a lesson as usual—must slower than usual, and with a sense of Peace and Love that was most beautiful. It amazed them all, and Sher and I have been wonderfully uplifted thru this beautiful experience. The radiation was the highest we have ever experienced in our class. Most of the students arrive at 7:30 and we have a silence until 8 p. m. This puts us 'in tune with the Infinite.'

"Please give your 'whole dear Family our dearest Love and blessings, and most especially Don and Max, with oceans for yourselves.

"'In loving, adoring service into the Light—

"I Am

"HELEN." [303]

"October 18th, 1935.

The Witness: The healing I referred to in the letter was when students would call up and say that they had a headache; I would tell them to be very still and use the law that the Ballards gave asking the Presence to take charge of the situation; that I would call the Might I Am Presence into action. I did not tell them that I would put into activity the method of healing that the Ballards

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

had told me repeatedly to employ. Ever since I was 18 I have been a healer. I have had healing powers. The teachings of the Ballards in respect to the healing was very similar to the teachings that I had been brought up in where love is everything in unity. Later on, however, the Ballards engaged in too much blasting. At the Shrine class in 1936 in Los Angeles the vicious carnate and discarnate entities were blasted. I did not use the blasting in my work. There were two classes in Toledo and the leaders were directed to do what they were told and I told them if they wanted these decrees they should go to the other classes; that it didn't make any difference to me. Right after I left the I Am movement I sent to our students copies of the document dated October 9, 1937.

Said document was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT Y.

Said document reads as follows:

"October 9th, 1937

"Beloved Students:

"Having been the Leader of the Wednesday Night 'I Am' Study Group for over two and a half years, I wish to thank you for your loyal support of this work, and beautiful co-operation at all times. Our association has been a joyous experience and there has been so much love expressed throughout.

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

"Now I have an announcement to make to you, [304] which would have been made next Wednesday night, if I had not been called out of the city. There will be no 'I Am' Study Group on Wednesday nights hereafter.

"After prayerful consideration over a period of months, I have decided to give up the Leadership of my Wednesday night Class and withdraw from the St. Germain Decree work under the auspices of the Ballards. I shall never give up the 'I Am' and all it stands for, and shall always be 100% for the teaching of Truth and the Absolute. And let me assure you that there has always been perfect harmony in our association with the other Leaders, all of the dear students, and between us and the Beloved Ballards.

"I am writing to the Ballards also at this time, resigning as an 'I AM' Group Leader and thanking them for the magnificent work they have accomplished, individually and collectively and for America and the world. Our blessings are with them and their work always.

"You are privileged to attend the Monday and Tuesday night 'I AM' Study Groups under the splendid leadership of Miss Schanbacher, at the Y.W.C.A. and Mr. Wright at the Secor Hotel. They will welcome you joyously. God bless them.

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

"I wish to be free from the restrictions of the Decree Class and let Inspiration take part in any class I lead hereafter.

"Therefore, I am starting a New Class Wednesday, Oct. 20th, 8:00 p.m. to 9:30 in our own home where we will meet each Wednesday night thereafter to study and expand in consciousness, as we gather our Light from the 'I AM' books and any other books inspired [305] with Truth and Light. You are cordially invited to attend this class which will be dedicated to the highest ideals, to peace, love, Light and all that the heart holds most dear, and to the attainment of our Perfection and Mastery.

"This will mean farewell to many of you blessed students, and a welcome to others, but may the freedom of the Light bless you always and may the Light of the Great Central Sun enfold you within its radiant embrace forever.

"In deepest love and heartfelt appreciation from one who has led your class sincerely and earnestly, and who will bless you forever,

"In the Service of the Light,

"HELEN M. PINKERTON."

"1978 Richmond Rd.,
"Toledo, Ohio."

The Witness: When Mrs. Ballard told me in Miami, after I asked her permission to start a Toledo class, that she had not heard from Saint Ger-

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

main, she did not say that it was for the purpose of spreading the I Am work. (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 2015.)

Defendants' Exhibit Z for identification was marked. The witness testified that she wrote that letter. Counsel for defendants explained that it was only a portion of a letter, the balance not having been located.

I don't know whether this letter was written after the close of the Ballards' class in Los Angeles but I only attended one class in Los Angeles and that was the 1936 class.

Said document was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT Z.

The portion of letter reads:

"My Darling Ballards:

"I just received a joyous letter from dear Maud [306] Hill, telling me so many interesting things about your Los Angeles classes. How glorious that you had such marvelous classes, and that you had to give a second class just to satisfy the enormous demand! Los Angeles has long been a center for higher Truth, but even so this response was surprising to say the least. Dear Max told me a few words about the original problem facing you there at the outset—and how magically the problems melted away before the help of the 'Mighty I Am Presence.'

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

"Mrs. Hill is looking forward so joyously to your visit, and what a treat it will be for you all. I shall be with you in spirit for my heart is with you always anyway.

"We are looking forward ourselves to having the beloved Messenger, Mrs. Margaret Pettit with us May 3rd, 4th and 5th, giving our Radiation group three lovely classes. Mrs. Hill's daughter, Alice Schonlaw, will drive Mrs. Pettit and a girl friend, Beatrice Churchill, down to Toledo. We regret that we cannot entertain them all here, but will try to see as much of them as possible. Margaret will sing for us 'the Silent Watcher' if we can arrange to have a piano in our hall at the hotel.

"My dearest dears, we have had four study group meetings since our Ferguson class, and the attendance has always been over forty. I seem to have slipped into the 'role' of Leader, and last Wednesday night, when I read the Jesus discourse of January first, 1935, I felt such a powerful radiation that every word I read of that glorious message seemed charged with powerful conviction! Even my voice became inspired and I felt [307] as tho Jesus was speaking thrut me!!! Many members of the class stepped up at the close to remark about the wonderful radiation and the clear, powerful conviction of every word of the discourses which passed my lips. Time and gain

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

> I am inspired to enlarge upon the various subjects (in loving memory of that glorious Miami class), but as a study leader I remain silent for the most part. I know positively that I have led in Truth work in other lives, and I am praying that Saint Germain will some day find me worthy to help in this work. The Fergusons gave us permission to remain in a single group for the present, but I recall only too clearly that our instructions in Florida regarding study groups, * * *."

I don't think this letter followed the class I attended as I refer to what Maude Hill stated. I don't think she attended the class before I did as I think I attended the first Ballard class in Los Angeles, although this might have been the second one. It probably was because she is telling me about it.

Direct Examination
(Redirect)

Before our class in Toledo in September of 1935, Mrs. Ballard stated that after one's ascension one can come back in his physical, tangible, visible body and hence I didn't have to be concerned about making an ascension and being separated from my children and husband. I didn't care to risk it, however. I never made an ascension. I am very human. (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 2023.)

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

Cross Examination

(Recross Examination)

The ascension as taught to me was to occur from the physical octave after we had used all the laws given by Saint Germain and purified our bodies with the light of one's presence until the light shown through it like a light within an alabaster [308] lamp. It was possible if we harmonized sufficiently and did not have an opinion about anything. We could not have the ascension unless we used the violet flame and called the Presence into action and the flame would dissolve the human creation around us and all these entities that were hanging onto us from all of our past embodiments. I believed it, I swallowed it whole. If I had reached the stage where I had felt I had attained perfection I would not be here.

Redirect Examination

I followed the Ballards' instructions to the best of my ability during my association with the Ballard movement.

Recross Examination

When I left the Ballard movement in 1937 I still felt I had to go forward—wherever the light was I was willing to take it. That was because I believed in Jesus Christ and because I am a Christian and because I believe in love and because I was raised on love in unity. We paid for subscriptions to "The

(Testimony of Helen M. Pinkerton.)

Voice" magazine. The price was originally $2.50 a year, subsequently, $3.00—35¢ a copy. There was nothing free in the work except our instructions to the leaders and those sheets were sent every couple of weeks.

Exception No. 63

(As to Count 8)

There was received in evidence as Government's Exhibit 156, an envelope addressed to Miss Lucille C. Seifert, 551 South Gramercy, Los Angeles, California, and a copy of the June 1940 issue of "The Voice" and it was stipulated in respect thereto that if Miss Seifert were called as a witness she would testify that she received the envelope and the magazine through the mail. Objection was made, however, upon the ground that it was incompetent, irrelevant and immaterial, no proper foundation had been laid (except as stipulated to) and for the further [309] reason that the exhibit shows on its face that it was published by the Sindelar Studios, and by stipulation it is agreed that the Sindelars were defendants in the last trial and were acquitted; that therefore the matter had been determined to be not an integral part of the scheme. Exception was allowed. (This document pertains to Count 8 of the indictment.)

MERLE CASTERLINE

was called as a witness on behalf of the Government and testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 13, p. 2030.)

I am acquainted with defendant, Mr. Cassiere. I am from Cleveland, Ohio. I first met Mr. Cassiere in January or February of 1936. He conducted two classes in Cleveland at Carnegie Hall and I attended three of his first ten lectures and nine of the second. Mr. Cassiere said that a person made an ascension in their physical body after they had perfected themselves through the use of the violet flame. He sold "The Magic Presence," "The I Am Discourses" and "Unveiled Mysteries." Love gifts were taken up. The Ballards were not present. Announcement was made at these meetings that one should give and give liberally because you only receive as you give. After one class on a Sunday evening a group of us had lunch with Mr. Cassiere and he stated that the reason he had come back to Ohio for a third class after being flooded out in Pittsburgh was because his pockets were empty. He said he knew he could get his pockets filled in Cleveland. When he came back to Cleveland for the third class he said that he had come back to save Cleveland from a flood. That there was to be an earthquake under the lake and the city was to drop into the lake unless the students would build a wall of light sufficient to save Cleveland. He stated that Mr. Ballard's experiences as recited in "Unveiled Mysteries" were true; also as to "The Magic

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

Presence." The Ballards conducted a meeting in the auditorium in Cleveland on November 3, 1936. My wife helped [310] Mrs. Mundy. I had charge of the ushers for which I was not paid. I heard my wife count the proceeds received from the sale of autographed books during the three days of said class. These were being autographed by Mr. Ballard and the proceeds were over $700. In addition to these autographed books, other books and literature was sold. During this class, from the platform I heard Mrs. Ballard say that there would be a destruction of the earth or an earthquake or the gas belts were to let go within two years and securities would be no good. That it would be better to sell the securities, keep what one needed for the two years, and give the rest to the I Am. I am familiar with the Saint Germain picture as contained in "Unveiled Mysteries." In October of 1936 I was talking to Mr. Cassiere after a meeting and a lady approached and asked about the symbols over the head of Saint Germain. He replied "Saint Germain hasn't told us yet, but when he does, we will let the students know." I have heard him say on many occasions that Saint Germain came and gave him instructions. I heard Mr. Cassiere say that precipitation was the turning of the unseen into the seen of an object that you wanted.

Cross Examination

I am 62 years old. I have had quite an education in spiritual matters. I have been a Bible student.

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

I have read quite a bit of the occult and have made a study of the metaphysical. At the time that I attended the I am meetings I was a leader of the metaphysical class. I did not earn my living from that, I had made my living from selling church and school furniture for one thing. Previous to that I was a messenger of the gospel. About four months after I attended the I Am meetings I turned my metaphysical class into an I Am class. This class continued until May, 1937, at which time I broke off with the I Am movement. Since then I have not conducted any [311] classes, Metaphysical or otherwise. I read the "Unveiled Mysteries," "The Magic Presence," "The I Am Discourses" and the Affirmations. From the time I first entered the I Am movement I did not accept it entirely. I am from Missouri. There were a good many truths mixed up with it—I was not certain for a while. I did not believe in the truth of the statement that a catastrophe was going to destroy the earth within two years and that securities should be sold and all proceeds not needed for over two years should be given to the I Am. I wrote the letters dated May 28, 1937, and June 5, 1937.

Said letter of May 28, 1937, was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT AA,

with the exception of a portion marked with red and blue crayon. It reads as follows:

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

Lakewood, May 28, 1937

"Mrs. E. W. Ballard,
"Detroit, Mich.

"My dear Mrs. Ballard:—

"I am addressing you because I am thoroughly convinced that you run the show as far as the 'I AM' work is concerned.

"In order that there may be no chance for misconstruels of this letter I am sending copies of it to several 'I AM' leaders and to Mr. and Mrs. Ferguson, your former associate Messenger.

"The going forth of this letter severs any and all connection I have had with the teaching or leading of any 'I AM' Group patterned after the mode favored by you and Mr. Ballard.

"Weeks ago we decided here that the Lakewood class would not follow certain instructions laid down by you among which was the use of the outline. At that time we dismissed three or four members of the class who chose to [312] go where the outline was to be used, but in return five or six others, who left class where the outline was used and who could not see it came with us. Our giving up connection with you doesn't necessarily mean that we are going to cease giving 'I AM' instruction, it simply means that we are not going to give it after your methods. This frees us to follow the leadings of

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

our own Christ within and at the same time removes from you any embarassment which might result from a dual teaching in the I AM as lead by you.

"Our first doubt of the possible reliability of the 'I AM' message as given out by you occured during the trouble we had here last autumn when 'Bill' Cassiere attempted, with your aid, so I am informed by Mrs. Hargreaves, to organize the I AM work here and in Ohio and was stopped by the protests of the group leaders here, this protest, I am happy to say, was *lead* by me. At that time I didn't know that you had a finger in the pie, and so when Mr. Cassiere was not subjected to any punishment, I began to think and also began to investigate and my investigations started at the Bible end. I knew that Bill hated the Bible and suspected that you did. As I have had a very thorough training in, not only Biblical literature, but also in Aramaic and Semitic literature, I know the meaning of the stem roots used in Aramaic, Hebrew, Greek and Latin versions of the Bible. So, when Bill began to rave about Jehovah as being from the astral world, I knew that he was ignorant because the stem root of the Hebrew word in Jehovah, or Yahveh, means I AM while the verbal forms means 'He who begins to be and is.' During all the time I have known Bill I have caught [313] him in about an hundred

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

mistakes in Biblical quotations and interpretations. I have caught a few on you as well. On page 309, lines 10 and 11, in the Discourse book you have the one you call Saint Germain quote Jesus as saying, 'See no man after the flesh.' As a matter of fact Jesus never did say that or anything like it. Paul wrote it, but not as a command, but simply a statement of what he was determined to do hereafter. If you are curious you will find Paul's statement in 2 Cor. 5:16. Of course you might get YOUR Saint Germain to make a statement that Jesus did say it and it was NOT recorded, but such a statement would be merely laughed at by those who KNOW their Bible.

"As a former Biblical research worker this work came very natural to me and I soon became convinced that the Jesus you quoted in Discourses was NOT the Jesus of the Bible. The language, style, methods of work, manner of thought were all different from the Jesus of the Bible. In short He was a different man altogether. From being a kindly loving man he has become, in your teaching one who can condemn and threaten all who oppose your own little schemes.

"Next an early examination of the Discourses in the 'Voice' satisfied me that ALL of them were authored by the same person, and that person Mr. Ballard. However, to make sure I

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

submitted them to two literary critics, one of them a former magazine editor, and they both stated that they were prepared to state that one person wrote ALL the Discourses in the magazines.

(A portion is deleted from the original letter at this point.)

"Those long decrees—I never did use them. They [314] are silly, inane, and only a flood of words thrown out by the astral world to take one's attention from his or her Christ mind.

"To-day for the first time I have read Dr. Bryan's Brochures, and I fully agree with him. Mr. Ballard's experiences in the first two books are surely plagarized from other authors. The time element in his books is wrong. It would have been impossible for him to sail on a boat for Europe on Aug. 28, 1932, spend ten months abroad and return to receive the Discourses over the light and sound ray from Oct. to Dec. 1932. Yet these two books make such statements.

"Under these circumstances I must pronounce your work anti-Christ and withdraw from all association with it, yet at the same time I admit that it is not all evil. A great many good things have come forth from your work, but like John Alexander Dowie, you have allowed the personal self to creep in, thereby inviting

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

in the astral disembodied to reassume control of your lives and these astral entities are making you destroy your own work.

"I bless you for the good work you have done and I earnestly pray that you will be able to shake yourself free from entity control.

"I am yours,"

The letter dated June 5, 1937, was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT BB.

It reads as follows:

Lakewood, Ohio, June 5, 1937.

"My Dear Mrs. Ballard:—

"Lest you might interpret my recent letter to mean that I believe that you and Mr. Ballard started out to deliberately deceive the religious public, I am adding this to my letter. I do not believe such to be the [315] case. I am able to accept the TEACHING in the first Three books, but I do believe that in the last year in some way, unknown to yourselves, you have been used by those who would be the natural enemies of such a teaching. I cannot follow the outline, I cannot accept the discourses in the magazines, I cannot accept the EXPERIENCES, I cannot accept the long decrees, for Jesus said that a man wouldn't be heard for much speaking, but let a man's communication be, yea, yea and nay, nay.

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

"Under these circumstances I believed it to be far better to retire as a leader than to enter into a controversy. Such a move would set us both free, I to teach what I could accept, and, having no direct connection with you, naturally you could not be looked upon as responsible for what came out of our class. It was fair to you and fair to us. I am not your enemy nor an enemy of what you sincerely believe you should teach. I am just a son of the 'I AM' who wishes well to you and wouldn't lift a finger publicly against you or your work. After all Gamiel's advice to the Jews as to what they ought to do about the new Christian faith, is as pertinent today as it was then, he said: 'Leave them alone, if it is of God you can't stop it and you would be fighting against God, if it is not of God it will fall to the ground.'

"With that statement I am content and you ought to be. If my work is of God you can't stop it, if not it will fail and the same thing is true of your work, if it is true, no man can stop it, if not it will fall of itself, so why fight?

"Sincerely

"MERTON CASTERLINE."

The Witness: I discussed with the Government Officials [316] two or three times the statement I

(Testimony of Merle Casterline.)

have made about Mrs. Ballard suggesting that the securities be sold. I don't think I mentioned it to Government's counsel, not even before I went on the stand today. No, I didn't tell any Post Office Inspector about it but maybe Mrs. Casterline did.

ERNEST C. RICORD

was called as a witness by and on behalf of the Government and testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 14, p. 2068.)

I live in Burbank, California, and am a real estate salesman. I have only lived in this locality for one year. I became a member of the I Am movement in July, 1935, and ceased being a member in November, 1939. I was a hundred percenter. I had signed an application for the hundred percent group and during the period of time that I was a hundred percenter I endeavored to live according to the agreements expressed in the application. I attended the meetings of the Minutemen Organization of the I Am group. I purchased about 12 or 15 books of the I Am movement. The Ballards stated from the platform that the events related therein were true and real. I believed this. I heard Mrs. Ballard state that eventually every person would have to make an ascension; that to make an ascension one had to purify one's physical body so that he could take it with him and not have to pass through what we call

(Testimony of Ernest C. Ricord.)

death. I believed this. They stated that every I Am student could make the ascension in the embodiment in which he first learned of the I Am teaching. I knew Mr. Frank B. Kelly. Government's Exhibit 140 is a picture of him. He was a member of the I Am. I knew him prior to his death. He died in February of 1939. I was present at his funeral and saw his body lying in the casket. I didn't see the ultimate disposal of the remains. I remained in the mortuary. This was in Los Angeles. A few months later in Los Angeles at a Minute Men's meeting, Mr. Ballard, in the assembly rooms of [317] the Friday Morning Building in Los Angeles, stated that Mr. Kelly had made an ascension. I don't know the names of the other men who were present. I was a close friend of Harry Rogers. I recall having seen the group leader letter dated June 30, 1939, Government's Exhibit 104; particularly the part marked on page 3.

Cross-Examination

The teaching was that until the student reached that degree of perfection which entitled him to ascend, he would not ascend. I never reached the stage of perfection which I thought entitled me to ascend. I was not ashamed of any of the things I did in connection with the hundred percent group. The idea was that we should attempt to make better men of ourselves. This I tried to do. During the time I was a member of the I Am movement I feel that I improved myself from the standpoint of

(Testimony of Ernest C. Ricord.)

mental attitude toward people and insofar as my attitude toward the Government, that is, insofar as the Constitution being an inspired instrument was concerned. This was taught to the I Am members, particularly to the Minute Men's group. I would not call the Minute Men's group an association but merely a series of meetings wherein particular instruction was given in respect to the preservation of the system of government under which we were living. I don't recall Mr. Ballard saying that Mr. Kelly had told him that Mrs. Kelly had made the ascension. I didn't talk to Mrs. Kelly about it myself. I read in Government's Exhibit 104, in referring to Mr. Kelly, 'Under the new dispensation he drew into his estheric body that purified substance and its ascension was made.' I rather doubted it at that time. I began to doubt about June, 1939. I would not say I was the confident of Harry Rogers—I would say I was his associate. I assisted him in his work. During a large part of the time that I was in the movement I lived with Harry Rogers. His class was [318] dissolved in June (1939). When the Rogers were on trips I supervised his home and the care of his children. While living with Mr. Rogers I discussed the I Am movement in the privacy of our home. I was sincere in my devotion and sincerity in connection with the I Am until June of 1939. Without any third person being present whom we might seek to influence, Mr. Rogers and I would discuss our experiences in the

(Testimony of Ernest C. Ricord.)

I Am. After ascension it was my understanding that there would be eternal life. In the event the state of perfection was not attained in this embodiment, to attain ascension we were taught it would be necessary for us to have a re-embodiment.

Redirect Examination

My goal was toward ascension. The Ballards stated that if we would try hard enough we would make our ascension and I tried but did not attain ascension. Since leaving the movement I am still trying to make myself better. I read 'The Voice' magazine while I was a member. I have heard Mr. Ballard state from the platform, as contained in the Mighty Victory's Discourse, dated August 22, 1938, from 'The Voice' magazine, a part of Government's Exhibit 42, 'Individuals have tried sometimes to see how much they could deceive the messengers, believing that the messengers didn't know everything that was going on.'

Recross Examination

The Ballards told me that Jesus was an ascended master and that he had achieved his ascension by reason of the perfection that he had brought to himself. I believed in an eternal life. The kind of ascension that the Ballards talked about was the kind of ascension that they said Jesus had had. In other words, Jesus didn't have to have another re-embodiment. This was the ultimate goal of every human being.

(Testimony of Ernest C. Ricord.)

Redirect Examination

The Ballards did not teach me that it was because of [319] their I Am teachings that Jesus made his ascension. Before I went into the I Am movement in 1935 I believed in the theory of eternal life.

Recross Examination

The Ballards did say on many occasions that the application of the principles of the I Am movement is what brought about and would bring about the ascension of everybody eventually.

LOUIS I. GOLDBERG

was called as a witness on behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

I manufacture phonograph transcription records. I met Mrs. Ballard several years ago. The name of our firm was the Allied Phonograph and Record Manufacturing Company, located in Hollywood. I have met Donald Ballard. I met Guy Ballard at the same time I first met Mrs. Ballard and Donald. The records that we manufactured for the I Am movement were identical to Government's Exhibit 150-A. We did business through one Ted Dahl who was a broker or agent. These blue records are made of a vinylite resin. The trade name is alvar. In addition, blue dye for coloring, calcium stearate,

(Testimony of Louis I. Goldberg.)

cumar resin and halowax are used in the formula. The ingredients are mixed, annealed and molded at our plant in Hollywood. We first made this type of record for the I Am in the early summer of 1940 or the late spring. The blue record was made up especially for the I Am people but the ingredients could have been purchased before. No formula was submitted by the Ballards prior to the time that we made this material into records. We had submitted samples before we went into actual production to a Mr. C. P. MacGregor. I don't recall ever having any discussion with Donald Ballard relative to the substance of material in this record. The formula for this record was developed in our own plant under my indirect supervision. I am the manager of the plant. [320]

TED DAHL

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I am in the advertising radio production business. I was employed in that connection by the Allied Advertising Agency in 1937. While so employed I became acquainted with the Ballards. I met Mrs. Ballard in 1937. At that time I was employed in behalf of Allied Advertising Agency as the advertising agency for Mrs. Ballard, that is, to buy radio time, select radio stations and perform other functions of an agency. Our fee was to be the

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

usual 15 per cent agency fee. I continued to be advertising agent for the Ballard organization until about six months ago, but in December of 1939, I left the Allied Advertising Agency and had my own agency.

Exception No. 64

Over the objection of defendants that it was immaterial, that there was no charge of any embezzlement or the misuse of any funds in connection with radio, and upon the further ground that it was too indefinite, to which exception was taken, the witness was permitted to testify that during his association with the Ballard movement he handled for radio advertising approximately $190,000.

The Witness: During my association with the I Am movement as advertising agent my dealings were with Mrs. Ballard and Mrs. Mundy principally. In addition to arranging for time and selecting stations we would forward to the stations scripts for their, or their attorneys' approval or disapproval. I supervised the making of the transcriptions and arranged for mailing them to the different radio stations. Mrs. Ballard made these transcriptions and then there was music. To my knowledge Donald didn't participate in the making of these transcriptions. We made a charge for the leasing of the transcriptions. Sometimes the Allied Advertising Agency would receive a check for the transcriptions; sometimes the money was paid di-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

rect to the Ballards. I don't know how much was received for each record. The standard charge [321] was to be $10 for each playing, that is, for each side. If we received checks for the payment of these transcriptions we turned them over to Mrs. Ballard. When we received the money direct to turn over to Mrs. Ballard I presume the payment was $20 a record or $10 a side.

Exception No. 65

Over the objection of defendants that it was immaterial, the witness was permitted to testify that the records had been broadcast to over one hundred stations but he didn't know how many. Exception was allowed.

The Witness: I discussed with Mrs. Ballard the making of phonograph records. I was to find out the prices and make arrangements for the making of the records. This I did. The first records were black. When Mrs. Ballard asked me to get some information about records of a different color than black she didn't give me any formula nor did Donald, nor any other member of the I Am organization. I negotiated with Mr. MacGregor and Mr. Goldberg for the making of the blue records. Mrs. Ballard was present at MacGregor's office when samples were shown us by Mr. Goldberg. I heard nobody make any representation at that meeting relative to any healing power of the material from which these records were made.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

Government's Exhibit 157 was received in evidence.

The Witness: This radio script has notations in the handwriting of Mrs. Ballard. Mr. Lazarus read therefrom.

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 158,

a letter bearing Mrs. Ballard's signature, was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Statler Hotel,
"Boston, Mass.,
"9/22/37.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 South Western Ave., [322]
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"Your letter of September 17th just received. Enclosed herewith find check for $130.00 covering the enclosed bill, which kindly receipt and return to us.

"Regarding the $300.00 item of the Boston Broadcast which you have credited to the New York time, we are enclosing a copy of letter just sent Mrs. Ada Cox Fisher of New York, asking that she send you check in full for the bill for both time and records.

"Mrs. Fisher told us on Sunday in New Bedford that she had this already collected. We

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

much prefer to handle this in this manner and keep our records straight, for we do not desire to have this money for time appear on our records, where it is possible to handle it otherwise. Also we wish to keep each Station separate.

"Therefore, when Mrs. Fisher sends you check for $1435.00 will you kindly return to us the $360.00 which we advanced to you for the Boston time. Also send us check for $140.00 covering the 7 records. In this way we can both keep our records clear and straight.

"Thank you kindly for list of Stations to whom you sent audition Records, and we feel certain many more than those you have indicated will soon be using these records. We shall send each of the list who are anticipating putting on programs to encourage them and keep before them the need of getting this information to the public at this time.

"The check for Nampa, Idaho was not enclosed.

"Thanking you for all your services, and with all our Love and Blessings, we are

Sincerely in the Light, [323]

MR. & MRS. G. W. BALLARD

By MRS. G. W. BALLARD."

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 159

was received in evidence.

The Witness: This letter was part of my business record. Said letter is a copy and reads as follows:

"Statler Hotel,
"Boston, Mass., 9-22-37.

"Mrs. Ada Cox Fisher,
"Roosevelt Hotel,
"New York, N. Y.

Re: Radio Transcriptions

"Beloved One of the Light:

"Mr. Dahl has just sent us a statement of the New York Broadcasts and we are giving you a notation of same herewith:

7 15 minute periods nighttime 8:45 Oct. 8th to 14th	$1,295.00
7 Records: $20.00 each	140.00
	$1,435.00

"Instead of sending us a check as suggested on Sunday, will you kindly send Mr. Ted Dahl, of the Allied Adv. Agency, 553 South Western Ave., Los Angeles, Calif. a check for the above amount. If you have more than this amount, kindly hold same until we see you in Boston, when we will discuss with you our views on a ten day broadcast at this time.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Because of the smallness of the Engineering Auditorium, we feel it would be far better to take any amount you might desire to spend for another three day Broadcast and use it for Transcriptions after the class in New York closes, for that would stimulate the work there and keep this work before the people after we have gone. [324]

"We will discuss this further with you when you come to Boston.

"We will appreciate your taking care of the above check as quickly as possible, as it is necessary to advance the money to the New York station before the Broadcasts begin.

"With all Our Love and Blessings, and looking forward to seeing you at the close of the class here, we are

"Ever in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS,

"By ....."

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 160,

a letter bearing the signature of Mrs. Ballard, was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Sir Frances Drake Hotel,
"San Francisco, Calif.,
"January 26, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 South Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"We wired you this morning regarding the list of New Records for we want this to go in the Feb. Issue of the Magazine and the time limit is short for us to get it in; however, if you send it to us today we can yet get it in I feel sure.

"Also; will you kindly keep behind the Cleveland and Washington personal Broadcasting time and let me have this at the earliest possible moment, especially the Cleveland, as it will soon be necessary to get the [325] Announcements printed; also furnish Cleveland with the Information for the Radio folders. We have a little more time for Washington, but will appreciate this information for both cities as early as possible.

"Recently we had a letter from a student in Washington, D. C. asking for information re-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

garding the cost of Broadcasts—transcriptions in Washington D. C. She is one who is interested in putting on some programs, paying for them personally, but she does not want to be known in the matter; therefore, does not want to work through the Bresslers.

"She did not give us any idea of how much money she has, but if you will give us the Station cost of the previous broadcasts in Washington, we will send it to her and tell her if she is interested to send us the money and we will arrange through you to put these Programs on. Not knowing the cost she did not know whether the amount she has would be worth while.

"Will you send us this information at once and we will then write her and see if this is not something we can get started.

"We just had a long talk with Mrs. Fowler of Seattle, who is here for the Class and there seems to have been some difficulty in getting the Records in time and they have had to repeat the old ones so many times; however, she states they now have a supply and she feels it will be eliminated. If you are coming up to the Class here, we will see that you meet her and doubtless much can be straightened out.

"We are particularly anxious to have the list of the Records as to how they have been made up, for we are having inquiries and of course

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

cannot give [326] intelligent information, until we know how they are arranged as to numbers.

"With our kindest regards, we are

"Sincerely yours,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 161

was received in evidence. It was stipulated that the letter bore the signature of Mrs. Ballard. Said letter reads as follows:

"Sir Francis Drake Hotel
"San Francisco, California
"January 31, 1938

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"Regarding the Detroit situation. The only money we have ever received for Transcriptions is that sent us by you as per your letter of Oct. 13th to New York City you enclosed $20.00; also on Nov. 15th to W. P. Beach you sent us $10.00.

"We note you have written Isabella Thornton regarding this and if you don't get a satisfactory reply, please give us a statement of the amount due for Station time and Transcriptions and we will take it up with her.

"The Law of this work is that all students should call the Presence into action to supply

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

the necessary money to carry on this work, and we have never allowed credit at any time. We ask that in the future you hold the students to this requirement, for if they are not doing this, then they are not making the application and the work cannot continue in that field. Not having any way of checking these things ourselves we had no idea this situation existed. Kindly let us know the outcome. [327]

"Regarding Kansas City, we have received the following payments for Transcriptions; some have been direct, but our records do not show whether any came through your office or not; however, the deposits were as follows:

"Nov. 8	20.00
"Dec. 27	20.00
"Dec. 27	40.00
"Jan. 17	20.00
"Jan. 29	20.00

"In talking with Mrs. Carter yesterday she stated they were up to date with their payments. Perhaps you were not aware of these payments made direct is the reason for your saying Kansas City was behind.

"* * *

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD."

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 162

was received in evidence. It was stipulated that the letter bore the signature of Mrs. Ballard. Said letter reads in part as follows:

"Belmont Plaza Hotel,
"New York, N. Y.
"May 22, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 So. Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

In re: Chicago Broadcasts

Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"Will you kindly keep us informed on the Kansas City situation? We feel that it is not right that they are in ar*reras* either in the Station time or the Transcriptions. [328] The last transcription we have received payment for was March 27th. This is getting too far in arears and we ask that you keep us closely informed regarding this. While they are responsible and all that, still if they are not calling the Presence into action sufficiently to bring forth the funds to take care of this without it running behind, then something must be done about it.

"Regarding the *the* making of new Transcriptions before the Shrine Class. The way

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

my work is going I feel sure I can have sufficient Broadcasts completed to record two full days. Therefore, will you make arrangements, if possible, for Monday the 27th and Tuesday the 28th of June for these recordings. This will give me a little time after reaching Los Angeles to complete any manuscript I might not get finished enroute.

"We have the new song book in the hands of the printer and the "ASCENDED MASTER LIGHT" the next book is all ready except final proofing for the Printers. Both of these will have to be proffed when they come from the Printers and another month's Magazine, to get to Sindelars, but I still feel I can write another eight or Ten Transcriptions before reaching Los Angeles. Therefore, go ahead and secure the time and make all arrangements for those two days.

"* * *

"Eternally in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 163

was received in evidence, and reads as follows:

"Biltmore Hotel,
"Los Angeles, Calif. [329]
"August 12, 1938

"Mrs. Florence Demorest,
"5473 Kimbark Ave.,
"Chicago, Illinois.
"Beloved One of the Light.

"Your letter of August 11th just received giving further details of your investigation of the Radio Work in Chicago.

"We regret very much that you have not followed the instructions in our letter to you of last Sunday wherein we asked you to hold everything in abeyance until Mr. Dahl came to Chicago; for all Radio arrangements must come through Mr. Dahl who is Saint Germain's representative. Your going ahead and making inquiries concerning rates etc. is not in accordance with our wishes; for it will make it very difficult for Mr. Dahl to do that which he wishes to do in Chicago.

"We wish it thoroughly understood that all money coming in for these Broadcasts, transcriptions or personal broadcasts must be turned over to us, either that collected from the students or any personal gifts from Miss Delfosse or other individuals. We then take care

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

of all payments to the Station and have a record of the entire transaction, which we must have on our books.

"Here in Los Angeles the different Groups collected their money and turned it over to us and we took care of all the disbursements and have a complete record of every cent received and disbursed—this we must have for our Auditors. Any other method of doing this will not be satisfactory to either Saint Germain or us.

"* * *

"THE BALLARDS." [330]

The signature on said letter was typewritten.

The Witness: I have never had any conversation with Saint Germain. To my knowledge I was never appointed Saint Germain's representative.

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 164

was received in evidence. It was stipulated the letter bore the signature of Betty Mundy. Said letter reads as follows:

"Lake Merritt Hotel,
"Oakland, Calif.,
"August 21, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Los Angeles, Calif.,

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"Since writing you this afternoon we have had another letter from Mrs. Fowler, who it

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

seems had made a personal contact with Station KOL and received the following proposition for the 7-day personal Broadcast: To broadcast either before 5 p. m. or after 10:00 p. m. as this is the only time available.

"Mrs. Ballard says neither of these times are satisfactory and under the circumstances to disregard the 7-day personal Broadcast.

"Mrs. Fowler also took up the matter of Broadcasting from the class each afternoon and received a price of $108.00 for the ten days. She received this in writing, and we are enclosing copy of that letter for your information.

"Now Mrs. Ballard is writing Mrs. Fowler that she will be glad to Broadcast the Class each afternoon at 3 P. M., but the arrangements with the Station must come through you—you are our agent, and it is Saint Germain's wish that you make all arrangements with Stations.

[331]

"Mrs. Fowler claims she has gotten a much better price than you quoted and that to date they only have $124.00 for all Broadcasts, but they feel by the time we get there they can cover it.

"Will you please get in touch with Mrs. Fowler and Station KOL and see what you can do regarding the Class afternoon Broadcasts. It is a rather mixed-up affair as it stands, but

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

we are making it plain to her that it must come through you; as you surely can get as good price as they individually can. Kindly send your letter Air Mail, as she says they come regular mail and it takes five days to get there, she not receiving your letter mailed on the 9th until the 13th.

"Please see what you can do regarding this and let us know. I trust I have made this clear. I just returned from a Meeting where we had a wonderful dictation. It is quite late, but I am sending this Air Mail Special and you should have it tomorrow morning early. Please get after this right away.

We will write you further regarding this if we get any information from Seattle, but believe it will not be turned over to you. It seems impossible to make the students understand they must deal through you and not direct with the Stations, but perhaps when we disregard their arrangements and turn it over to you once or twice they will find we mean business.

"All Love and Blessings,

"Sincerely in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By BETTY O. MUNDY"

The Witness: I think Mrs. Fowler was a group leader (the Mrs. Fowler referred to in that letter),

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

but I don't know [332] what the situation that is referred to is.

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 165

was received in evidence. It was stipulated that it was signed by Mrs. Ballard. Said letter reads as follows:

"Shirley Savoy Hotel,
"Denver, Colo.,
"June 10, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
Allied Adv. Agency,
553 So. Western Ave.,
Los Angeles, Calif.

In re: New York Broadcasts

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"Answering your letter of June 9th regarding the matter of commissions to be paid you on the New York broadcasts we prefer to go into this entire situation with you in person rather than trying to explain it by writing. It is for this reason we have not written you more fully. So much happened in a few short days and we were so occupied that it was utterly impossible to sit down and go into detail regarding all that was happening. However, I am sure you will be happy with us in the way things are expanding and we want you to know we have not forgotten you and your splendid

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

work. It has rather been lack of time for the 13-day class there was strenuous.

"For your information we might state when we went to the hall the day before class they would not let the boys enter as there was a fur strike on and Union Headquarters were in the building. We finally gained access to the Theatre, but the first three days had to partition the lobby off as there were hundreds of strikers milling in and out. This all had to be handled, peace maintained, but on the third day the thing broke and the strike ended [333] through the decrees that went up. This is only a small part of what we had to handle in that city; for you know it is the seat of communism.

"Mrs. Fisher was equally busy, for the entire responsibility of the New York Groups rested upon her shoulders. She did tell us she had returned the Transcriptions, for she had not ordered them and had no intention of continuing after their contract run out, and she was quite upset at receiving a bill for further programs. We soothed her ruffled feathers and asked that she just let it rest and we would see how it worked out. In the meantime Mr. Calman we found had not returned the Transcriptions, so they were the ones they used following our class.

"I am sure Mrs. Fisher had no intention of disregarding you in the matter. It is just one

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

of those times when things happened so fast in the midst of so much to be handled that there was no time for correspondence.

"This entire thing can be satisfactorily explained when I see you personally, and as I am now in the midst of page-proofs for the new book which must be off the Press for the Shrine Class, I am going to ask that you hold everything in abeyance until I see you personally and go into detail regarding all that has happened while in the East.

"We appreciate your splendid work and all you have done, and if you have not been *kept* fully informed the fault is rather ours, but we have done the very best we could under the circumstances; for the work has been so terrific but the accomplishment so wonderful that it makes up for the extra strain and loss of hours of sleep.

"Our Love and Blessings enfold you and yours, and we will soon see you in Los Angeles.

[334]

"Sincerely yours,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 166.

a letter with the signature of "The Ballards" and an enclosure, was received in evidence, and reads as follows:

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Shirley Savoy Hotel,
"Denver, Colo,
"June 11, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 So. Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"Regarding the Arizona network which you wrote us about. We did not reply to this, for we wanted to take it up with you in person, and there is nothing we could do at this end until we had gone into it a little further. Also the Texas situation; if you will hold these in abeyance until we return to Los Angeles we can then check up and see what can be done. The idea of a State hook-up with the different cities assisting in the cost looks like a very marvelous proposition for that would give a good Station to broadcast over which would reach many more people. We will discuss it further with you when we are in Los Angeles.

"There are many things which we can check over with you. The enclosed copy of letter to Miss Delfosse with statement attached is one thing, for we confess this has been quite a proposition, but we believe from now on things will be different, as we are going to insist that she stay [335] out of the picture so far as securing Station time is concerned. We know

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

she will do this when she realizes it is Saint Germain's wish.

"* * *

"THE BALLARDS
"By Mrs. G. W. BALLARD"

Attached thereto is a letter to Miss Cecelia C. Delfosse, Chicago, Illinois. It is also from the Shirley Savoy Hotel, Denver, Colorado, same date:

"In re: Chicago Broadcasting

"Blessed One of the Light:

"Your letter of June 4th regarding time, dates, etc. of the Chicago Broadcasts has been received. I have had Mrs. Mundy check this with her records and we are enclosing herewith a statement as the account stands as nearly as we are able to check up.

"* * *

"Saint Germain has requested that in the future Mr. Dahl be allowed to secure all station time, in Chicago, as well as elsewhere, so this can be made uniform with other cities. We feel this will work out more satisfactorily to everybody concerned, for the constant switching of time and stations is not producing the best results from the Inner standpoint. When once you have established a focus and gained your momentum over one station and have your listeners, then to switch stations or even time is disturbing the whole picture, so far

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

as the Inner action of the Law is concerned; and you cannot expect the best results.

"We do so appreciate your sincere desire and unselfish effort in making it possible for Chicago to have these broadcasts, and we know your intent is the [336] best in the world; but since Saint Germain has requested it, we also know you will turn the handling of the securing of station time, etc. over to Mr. Dahl, in the future. If Mr. Dahl cannot secure the proper time he can then contact you personally.

"* * *

"THE BALLARDS

"By.....

"P. S. Will you check the enclosed statement and let me know whether or not it is right?

"EWB"

Then the statement enclosed is for Station WIND, Sunday, 9:30 a.m., ended program of 24 weeks, $240.

Then another amount, $220.

Another amount, $130.

Another amount, $80.

Another amount, $130.

Total, $800.

Then the following page, added to that total is another amount of $260, another amount of $520, and a statement:

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Total amount of cost of Records for Broadcasts from Oct. 31st, 1937 to Nov. 7th, 1938—end of 26 week Broadcast $1,580.00."

Then follows: "Received from C. C. Delfosse on account of records to date, $745.00."

Then the typewritten signature "Saint Germain Press."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 167,

bearing the signature of "Betty O. Mundy", was received in evidence, and reads as follows:

"Gowman Hotel,
"Seattle, Wash.,
"September 19, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl, [337]
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 South Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"I have delayed answering your request for shipping or billing instructions for the Records until those shipped here arrived and we could check them to see just what had been shipped.

Please give the Chicago Office a list of all Records shipped here, and those delivered in Los Angeles, and when you do this kindly make a duplicate copy for me, so I will know just what is or has been done.

"Ordinarily we do not carry records with us

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

and the stock in Los Angeles belongs to the Saint Germain Press, but because of these new Records we decided it would be best to have some of them in Oakland and here; so I sent the order to you and a duplicate to Chicago, for this must show on their books, for it is their stock. Therefore, the biggest thing I have to do now is get the thing straightened out with Chicago.

"If you will either bill them or send them a letter giving the exact number of those you have already shipped here; and any others that may be coming today; then give them a list of those delivered in Los Angeles, I will figure it out and send in an additional order for the surplus we have received. I have not had time to think it out, as I am in the midst of manuscript for the next Magazine, but will try and get to it tomorrow.

"I am taking it for granted that you will deliver the full sets of seven (7) each to Don, Dr. Brown and Cecil Stokes; as well as the set of three (3) #103, 104, [338] 105, on my Order #90 which were to be delivered to Catherine Rogers at her home. Also that you have sent fifty (50) of each Nos. 106, 107, and 108 to the Chicago Office.

"When these have all been taken care of then my orders will have been taken care of.

"Will you investigate and see whether or not.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

your Invoice #3042 for Express charges $5.01 has been paid or not? I do not have a record of it having been, yet am not sure. This was dated August 22nd.

"Your request for Mrs. Carol Ralph's address in Bridgeport, Conn. we do not have, for she is not a Group Leader, at least not on our list, so I guess you will have to get it from Harold Hall.

"We are in receipt of an inquiry from Mrs. G. O. Ash, 1903 N. Cheyenne, Tulsa, Oklahoma, asking the price of Records, saying she was trying to arrange for programs on the Radio. I have written her today telling her she must get in touch with you, so if you hear from her you will know who she is. We know nothing of her, as she is not listed as a Group Leader, so all we can do is await further development. We will soon know more about her activities, I hope and if she is not desirable we will let you know.

"Our Class here is marvelous. It did not seem possible it could surpass Oakland, but it is just as much step-up as that was over Los Angeles; so it goes on constantly.

"We are holding up writing Mr. Calman, until we hear further from you; therefore, will appreciate your early reply on that matter.

"Kindly mail the bill for the 200 Minute Men; 150 [339] Rainbow Rays and 150 Rose of Light to us and we will mail you check.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"With our Love and Blessings, and all the Light and Radiance I can extend from this marvelous class, I am

"Sincerely in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By BETTY O. MUNDY

"P. S. Thanks for recent checks enclosed."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 168,

a letter bearing Mrs. Ballard's signature, was received in evidence, and reads as follows:

"Gowman Hotel,
"Seattle, Wash.,
"September 20, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl
"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,
"553 South Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

Transcriptions—Canada

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"We have from time to time had inquiries regarding securing our Transcriptions to be used on the Radio in Canada, and are just in receipt of a Group Leader in Montreal.

"So far Saint Germain has not given permission to use these Transcriptions in Canada, but we shall take it up with Him the next time he comes and see what His wishes are at this time. In the meantime, will you investigate

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

and let us know how the matter could be handled. What are the requirements with the Canadian government?

"There might be a few of the Transcriptions we could use, but those that mention the United States we feel quite sure would not be usable; therefore, we might [340] run up against a situation we could not supply records for until special ones were made.

"Will you kindly see what information you can get regarding the using of Transcriptions in Canada, provided the context is satisfactory? We will appreciate knowing what we could do, then when we take it up with Saint Germain we can more intelligently discuss it and know where we stand.

"We will thank you for your reply to this at your convenience.

"Thanking you, and with all Love, Light and Blessings, we are

"Eternally in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD."

The Witness: I was not a member of the I Am organization during my association with them.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 169,

a letter bearing the typewritten signature "Mr. & Mrs. G. W. Ballard", was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Palmer House,
"Chicago, Ills.,
"October 4, 1938.

"Commissioner of Customs,
"Ottawa, Canada.

"Dear Sir:

"We are enclosing herewith one of our Class Announcements; also a radio announcement, showing the work Mrs. Ballard and myself are doing throughout the United States.

"For the past year and a half we have had our Radio Transcriptions in the important cities throughout the United States, *we* well as having our lectures Broadcast [341] from the Halls where we speak.

"Our student group numbers approximately three-quarters of a million, of the very highest type people in our country, as well as Canada, where we have a number of Study Groups. Recently we have received numerous calls for our Radio Transcriptions to be put on in Canada, in order that this work might become better known throughout your country.

"This work is purely educational, non political and non-sectarian. There are no money

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

schemes in nor back of it and is supported entirely through the sale of our books and Love Gifts from grateful students. Our Radio Transcriptions which contain the fundamentals of this teaching are not for sale, but leased to the Student Groups and returned to us after once being used.

"These Radio Transcriptions do not carry any mention of money; nor have we ever asked for a dime in this work; neither have we asked for a student list or solicited students. The enclosed folders are the only advertising we have ever done, as our chief concern is for the protection of America and the prevention of war entering our borders.

"We are writing you to ask what the Canadian regulations are for accepting American Radio Transcriptions into your country, and we will appreciate any information you are able to give us, as the demand is growing more all the time for this Instruction in Canada. Our desire is to ship these Transcriptions to one of the Student Groups in Canada and they in turn ship it to other Groups there, before being returned to us. They could be returned through the same port as they are entered.

"Recently our agent who handles these Transcriptions [342] for us, Mr. Ted Dahl, 553 South Western Ave., Los Angeles, Calif., was in Chicago and we called at the Canadian Cus-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

toms Office here to see what we could find out regarding this matter. Your agent here suggested we write you personally; also send you one of the Transcriptions for your inspection. We have instructed Mr. Dahl to send this Record, which you can have played from any Radio Station.

"We shall be very glad to receive what information you can give us on this matter, and will furnish you with any further information you might desire.

"Thanking you for your reply regarding the method of procedure in such matters, and with our very kind regards and Blessings, we are

"Sincerely yours,

"MR. & MRS. G. W. BALLARD

"By ....."

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 170,

a letter bearing the signature of "Betty O. Mundy", was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Gowman Hotel,
"Seattle, Wash.,
"September 22, 1938.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"Allied Adv. Agency,
"553 So. Western Ave.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"Regarding the Oakland situation, please be at rest about that and keep calling the Presence into action to produce Perfection there. They had a pretty big pull [343] financially with the recent class and may be trying to get their breath and put it up to the students before giving you an answer. We do not feel it wise to interfere, but will continue to call the Presence to produce Perfection and open the way for this to be done.

"* * *

"All our Love and Blessings, and we call the 'Mighty I AM Presence' to enfold you in Its Mantle of Light, Love, Peace Happiness and Prosperity, to keep your pathway illumined

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

and hold you eternally victorious in the Light.

"Sincerely in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By BETTY O. MUNDY

"P. S. Mrs. Ballard says she would not be interested in 10" Records—so disregard that. We will doubtless order in lots of 500 each hereafter and save the extra cost.

BOM"

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 171,

a letter bearing the signature of Mrs. Ballard, was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Washington, D. C.

"November 10, 1938

"Mr. Ted Dahl,

"Allied Adv. Agency, Inc.,

"553 South Western Ave.,

"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"Saint Germain was with us in person for sometime this morning and among other things he spoke about the Class Broadcasts in the future.

"* * *[344]

"Sincerely in the Light

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 172,

a letter bearing the signature of Mrs. Ballard, was received in evidence and read as follows:

"Lake Merritt Hotel,
"Oakland, Calif.,
"February 18, 1939.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"4354 W. Third St.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"We are enclosing herewith copy of letter today sent to the Canadian students and trust that this brings forth fruit ere long. We feel quite confident that you can look for an immediate response from Mr. James P. Wood, Guy Block Montrael, Quebec; also from Mrs. Margaret J. Chellis, Dick Building, Vancouver, B. C.

"We wish to call your attention to the fact that we do not know personally these Canadian Group Leaders, so we sent a letter to all of them; therefore, you may find letters of inquiry coming from two or three persons in some cities. We will have to be guided by the contents of their letter as to whether or not they

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

are responsible individuals to handle our Broadcasting there.

"* * *

"Yours in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD [345]

(Enclosure)

"Lake Merritt Hotel,

"Oakland, Calif., Feb. 17, 1939.

"Beloved Students of Canada:

"These Broadcasts are usually sponsored by the local Reading Room or some Group Leader who has proved his or her strength and loyalty to the Light. It has been Saint Germain's request from the beginning of this Radio work that the expenses of all Broadcasting be carried by the Student Body; for after the work has been brought to this point and the students have received the benefit and blessings through their application of this Law; then they should be willing to take the responsibility and make the call that the rest of humanity may have the opportunity to know of this Ascended Master teaching; and there is no better way to do this than through the Radio Broadcasts. Through the student's willingness to give this assistance to their fellowman they in turn gain their own freedom.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"As you know we never allow funds to be solicited in any way, but through the students making dynamic systematic calls with sufficient intensity and determination to the 'Mighty I AM Presence' and the Ascended Ones, for the release of the needed money for this purpose; they soon gain sufficient momentum through their calls to bring it forth into outer manifestation. In most instances, they have started out with one Broadcast each week and gradually increase it to five and six. We know this can be done, for it has been proven in every city where our Transcriptions have gone on the air.

"* * *

"Mr. Dahl is in a position to give you all information [346] needed and can secure for you the best time and lowest rates; and we cannot guarantee that we could handle the Radio activities in Canada unless Mr. Dahl is allowed to handle it exclusively. He receives his small commission from the radio station direct and it does not add anything to the cost of the Broadcasts. Mr. Dahl is a good 'I AM' Student and has the interest of the work at heart more than the small commission he receives; but by working with him we can give you the best service, since we are travelling all the time and he knows our wishes in the matter.

"We have written the Commissioner of Customs in Ottawa and find it will cost us $2.50 per record to get them into Canada; however,

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

we hope to arrange for a number of programs there and can use the same record several times and save the extra cost on each record. In order to get the work started and to assist the Students of Canada we will be glad to assume this additional cost; which makes everything uniform with that of the United States so far as the students are concerned.

"We assure you of our desire to co-operate with the Canadian Students in every way possible and to give to the people of Canada this Ascended Master Instruction; which we know from experience we have had with these Broadcasts that they do reach thousands who otherwise would never hear of it. It is therefore, the greatest opportunity to extend this blessing to others and expand the Light within your country.

"We extend to you our heart's Love and Blessings, and assure you our hearts reach out to our sister country, Canada; for when we say 'America,' it naturally includes [347] Canada, Central and South America, for the Americas are really ONE in thought and feeling; and we wish you would always make this plain in your Study Groups.

"We call to the 'Mighty I Am Presence,' Saint Germain and the Other Ascended Ones to bless you eternally, and bring about the Per-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

fect Plan for everybody in this Service of the Light.

"Lovingly in the Service of the Light,

"MR. AND MRS. G. W. BALLARD.

"By MR. AND MRS. G. W. BALLARD."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 173,

a letter signed by Betty O. Mundy, was admitted in evidence, and reads as follows:

"Buckingham Hotel,
"Minneapolis, Minn.,
"Sept. 9, 1939.

"Mr. Ted Dahl
"4354 W. Third St.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"* * *

"Just as soon as I can get to it I have an inquiry from a student in Yorkton, Sask. Canada who wants to put on some Transcriptions, but it is one of those things that will have to be handled with a strong hand, as she has already interviewed the Station and thought she could handle it herself, take records back with her and use them over and over. I dis-illusioned her regarding this and told her everything was handled through our Agent and absolutely no personal contacting the Stations. It seems she is well known there and thinks she can get

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

better time than anyone else. Therefore, I will either write you fully as to what to do, or see you if you are [348] soon coming to Chicago. There is no particular hurry as she is here at the class and when I explained to her that she had to pay for the Records she rather crawfished, so whether it means anything or not I do not know, but I am told she can well afford to put on any number, so we will have to look into the matter. * * *

"Eternally in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By BETTY O. MUNDY

"P.S. The class here has come into line and now that the communists and Nazis know they can't do anything everything is wonderful, but the first two days were like trying to bore through steel with a pen-knife; but the Light of God never fails and it finally penetrated the density, but it was the worst we have encountered in a long time. Of course this is a communistic center.

BOM"

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 174.

a letter bearing the typewritten signature "Mr. & Mrs. G. W. Ballard", was received in evidence and reads as follows:

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Los Angeles, Calif.
"January 3, 1939.

"Mrs. Nanette Ray,
"2310 West B St.,
"Torrington, Wyo.

In re: Radio Transcriptions

"Beloved one of the Light:

"Your letters of Dec. 22nd and 28th to the Saint Germain Press, Chicago have been forwarded to us for reply, but because of the rush at the Holiday Season and the Shrine Class it has been impossible to reply sooner.

"It has been Saint Germain's request from the [349] beginning that all Radio Broadcasting be the responsibility of the Students, so far as financing them is concerned; for only through the students desire and effort to give this Instruction to others of mankind do they gain their own freedom.

"The cost of the Transcriptions are $20.00 each. This includes one Record containing two 15-minute Broadcasts. The Station time varies according to its power and activities. * * *

"We appreciate your inquiry, and know if the students in Wyo. will sponsor these Broadcasts that they will not only themselves receive a great blessing, but render a transcendent blessing to the rest of mankind. There is no greater opportunity for service at this time

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

than through getting these Transcriptions before mankind. The need is very great, and with the consciousness of mankind reaching out at this time for something to give them release and relief, there never was a more opportune time.

"* * *

"Yours very sincerely,

"MR. & MRS. G. W. BALLARD

"By ....."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 175,

a letter bearing the signature "The Ballards by Betty O. Mundy", was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Hotel Washington
"Washington, D. C.
"June 3, 1939.

"Mr. Ted Dahl
"4354 W. Third St.,
"Los Angeles, Calif. [350]

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"Several of the Miami, Florida students are here for the Washington class and they have been discussing with me the continuation of the Miami Transcriptions. Of course it is the same, old story of personalities, etc., yet nobody wants to assume the responsibility of signing the contract. Finally a Mrs. Harold

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

G. R. Wall (Minnie) showed me a contract she had from the Miami Beach Station for the coming year and said she was going to sign it. I told her I had talked to Miss Fisher who stated she had written you to take care of the contract.

"This morning I have a special delivery letter from Mrs. Wall stating she had signed the contract and returned it to the Miami Beach Station and when I wrote you to be sure and make it clear that she alone would sign the contract and nobody else was to be considered. She is a woman of means and I think has handled practically all the Radio work down there so far, so she will see to it that it is taken care of.

"I suggest if she starts writing you that you use your own judgment about answering the letters, for she writes about every other day—about nothing. She don't seem to have anything to do and takes it out writing letters. I have seen her most *ever* day at the class and also receive letters in between times, this morning a special delivery before I was out of my room. She is a lovely soul, but very erratic.

"I feel you should know this so you won't spend all your time trying to write her letters. I am sure you have taken care of whatever is needed to be done and we can discuss it further when I return to Los Angeles.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"I shall want to check up with you on all Radio [351] Activities, as there are many I have not had the dates and time on, so will be glad to get this straightened out while there. The Transcription accounts are very splendid and with the exception of Kansas City I believe are paid up to date, and God bless Kansas City they seem to be coming to light.

"All Love and Blessings, and will see you ere many days.

"Yours very truly,

"THE BALLARDS

"By BETTY O. MUNDY".

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 176,

a letter signed "The Ballards by Mrs. G. W. Ballard", was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Hotel Washington
"Washington, D. C.
"Nov. 6, 1939.

"Mr. Ted Dahl,
"4354 W. Third St.,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Dear Mr. Dahl:

"We call on the Law of Forgiveness for not writing you sooner of our change in address, but with the rush of packing and unpacking and moving from place to place it is difficult to keep up with what we do and do not do.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"The facts of the case are this: Saint Germain found after we arrived in Philadelphia that those vicious newspaper reporters were planning even greater viciousness to attempt to interfere with and stop our Philadelphia class, and we also found the Hall we had engaged had changed hands and we had no assurance of any kind of protection or even cooperation, but rather a joining [352] with the newspapers to assist them. Therefore, after going into the matter far enough Saint Germain advised we come here and hold the Philadelphia Class as well as the Washington one as scheduled.

"Some quick decisions and moves were necessary and of course coming three weeks ahead of our schedule to this Hotel we are just now getting settled down to business.

"Yesterday we started an 8-day closed class for the Philadelphia students and out-of-town guests who had come for that class; also the 100% Groups here. It looks like the classes in the future will be closed—we are not yet sure about the Shrine Class, but we know the one here beginning on the 24th will be. Students only are admitted and then only by signed card. This we find is going to be a great help in weeding out the undesirables, and if one gets in it is quite easy to withdraw their card of admission.

"Yesterday's class surpassed anything we

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

have known thus far and the Radiance released was simply wonderful, which proves these closed classes will be even a greater power than where there are greater numbers, for those who are not informed of the work and those who are vicious are of no assistance even tho they swell the numbers.

"We will be here for about four weeks yet until the close of this class, then I will go into Chicago for a few days before coming West but will keep you informed about making transcriptions, etc.

"In the meantime will you please write all the Radio Stations where Transcriptions are being used and withdraw the names of Reading Rooms, or Group addresses and make no reference to where people can contact the [353] work. This is Saint Germain's request and if students object you can either give them that reply or refer them to us, which perhaps would be better. Saint Germain says for some reason the Transcriptions are attracting the wrong class of people and here in the east the colored people are rushing in, while those who should be attracted do not come. With the closed classes and closed Groups in the future they could not get in anyhow until they had attended several beginners Groups and been prepared for the

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

larger classes, so the announcement must be changed. Kindly do this at once.

"Our Love and Blessings to you always.

"Sincerely in the Light,

"THE BALLARDS

"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 177

was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"Biltmore Hotel
"Los Angeles, California,
"February 22, 1940

"Beloved Group Leaders, 'I Am' Students and friends of America:

"It is my great privilege to express to you the Love and Blessings of our Beloved Saint Germain, our Blessed Daddy Ballard, Donald and myself for your faithful service to the Light. I take this opportunity to express my deep Love, gratitude and appreciation for the many letters, following our Beloved Daddy's Ascension, pledged renewed loyalty and determination to make greater effort toward controlling the human; and to give the obedience required to make the Ascension as He has done.

"Daddy's Great Love and devotion to the student [354] body while here is now amplified a million fold and is a Raising Power to give assistance to those who will harmonize them-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

selves and make the call to Him. Having so recently been in the physical form and in such close contact with the students, He can do for them what Others could not. Therefore, instead of feeling it is a loss of His physical Presence, all have really gained that which only time can prove; so I ask all to be happy and give to our Blessed Daddy that which He requires to give you His Full Assistance and Blessing.

"* * *

"America is in greater danger today than we dare say and needs all the assistance you can give thru your dynamic calls for that which must be done; so give all the energy of your being into those Decrees and do not let up for one moment. Be fearless, be dauntless, be determined and do not let one thought or feeling go forth that might be that which charges the energy of your Life Stream with destruction. The 'I Am' Students must stand firm and strong against suggestions and feelings of the vicious destructive forces; and be alert in detecting the deceit and treachery which operates everywhere. They must stand together like one solid diamond and not let one word of criticism, condemnation, jealousy or other destructive quality express thru them toward each other. Those are the wedges that drive into the Wall of Protection and give the sinister forces that which they need to continue their nefarious work.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Call your 'Mighty I Am Presence' into action to charge you with Ascended Master Discrimination, Discretion, God-control and Directing Intelligence and keep it sustained; also see that you never take on thoughts, feelings [355] or suggestions from anybody but God, good, and only the Ascended Masters' Consciousness. Watch your feelings! They are the barometer which tell you how you are qualifying the energy you send forth. Then stand, face and conquer! America needs your help today more than ever before. The destructive forces are determined and using every means to drag America into war; therefore, give all the assistance you know how for her protection now. You will be well repaid for every ounce of energy set forth, for I assure you the 'I Am' Students are the Only ones who can render the assistance needed at this time. Every human being in America needs to call to the 'Mighty I Am Presence' and the Ascended Masters for protection to America now.

"* * *

"I take this opportunity of calling the student's attention to a number of things which need special attention and a greater interest. One of the most urgent needs for America are the Radio Transcriptions. Since our Beloved Saint Germain asked that the Transcriptions be placed everywhere possible, because the Class

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

Broadcasts have been discontinued for the present, the students should feel the need of seeing the Transcriptions are on the air wherever possible, so more of mankind may have an opportunity of knowing about this Activity and giving these Decrees privately to keep war out of America. Just because a few individuals have been generous and willing to put these Broadcasts on the air is no reason that everyone should not feel his own individual responsibility; for Saint Germain has distinctly said the Radio Broadcasts are the responsibility of the student body. A few localities have done marvels and we bless them for that service, which is beyond anything they [356] can possibly comprehend.

"Just because a Group is small is no excuse. Every human being can make the call for the release of sufficient funds to give this protection for America, because that does go out in the Transcriptions. If you cannot put these Broadcasts on in your own city or state you can assist someone else and in so doing, you will find it amplified and returned to you a million fold. There are always places where the need is great and where Stations are glad to put the Broadcasts on, so we will see that all funds sent in are used where they can bring the greatest help.

"* * *

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"Because of the many requests, it is our great joy and privilege to announce the release of our Beloved Daddy Ballard's Picture in four sizes which all the students can have for contemplation and the tremendous Radiation He is pouring thru them. It is beyond anything we have yet experienced; and we know this will fill a great call among the student body. These pictures may be purchased now from the Saint Germain Press, Chicago, Illinois.

"* * *

"Ever in the Service of the Light,
"MRS. G. W. BALLARD and DONALD"

The Witness: I didn't have anything to do with the charts and flames in action.

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 58, page 35, the February 1940 issue of "The Voice".

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 178,

an announcement bearing the signature "Mr. & Mrs. G. W. Ballard by Mr. G. W. Ballard," (apparently mimeographed), was received in evidence, and reads as follows: [357]

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"

Name of City
RADIO ANNOUNCEMENT
Mrs. G. W. Ballard
will present, the
Ascended Masters' Instruction
on the
'Mighty I Am Presence'
which is the
Law of Life

Over Station..... ....
Date City

Hours and Subjects to be presented are:

.....

.....

Listen In! Help Save America!

For further Information concerning this Instruction, contact.....
where all Books may also be purchased.

These Broadcasts will be followed by a ten day Class of Instruction by..... at .....All are cordially invited to attend. No charge is made for this Instruction. For further information contact.....
Name

.....
Address

Future Classes to Be Held by Mr. & Mrs. Ballard

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

Mr. and Mrs. Ballard welcome all sincere seekers of the Light that they may receive this Ascended Masters' Instruction and Radiation, and through that, do Protective Work for themselves, America, and the World.

Note to Sponsors: [358]

Names of Messengers or Appointed Messengers; names and addresses of Halls, dates and names of one sponsoring Broadcast to be filled in by Local sponsor.

To be printed thin paper. Size 3½ x 5½

MR. & MRS. G. W. BALLARD

By MR. G. W. BALLARD"

Seattle, Wash.

Aug. 16, 1937."

The last page has a list of 10 matters for sale and the prices of each, and then the notation:

"Headquarters for all publications, Saint Germain Press, P. O. Box 1133, Chicago, Ills."

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 179,

a copy of Radio Broadcast The "Mighty I Am Presence" and the Ascended Masters by Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Ballard, Their Messengers, was admitted in evidence and reads in part as follows:

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

"RADIO BROADCAST

"The 'Mighty I Am Presence' and the Ascended Masters

by

Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Ballard, Their Messengers

"* * *

"This is the only way and means by which all problems of human experience can be solved harmoniously and permanently. All other methods of solving problems are but temporary and unsatisfactory. Humanity has been solving problems for thousands of years and yet, it has just as many and is just as discordant to-day s it was millions of years ago—proving that it nas not been living Life according to God's Plan, which is the Law of Perfection of the 'Mighty I Am Presence.'

The Witness: I didn't write that copy. I have seen the document before in our office. It was contained in our file. [359]

Government's Exhibit 180 was received in evidence:

The Witness: This is a copy, a "Station Copy" of an original sent us by Mrs. Ballard and we made copies which were forwarded to radio stations for their approval or their attorneys' approval.

Mr. Lazarus read therefrom.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

Cross Examination

I am 38 years old. I have been in the radio business for about 12 years and in the advertising business since the first part of 1935. All script that is used over the air has to meet the regulations of the Federal Communications Commission. That is the reason why we submitted the script to the station management. The 15 per cent commission that I received did not add to the cost of the broadcast as this is a regularly established commission that all advertising agencies receive. Electrical transcriptions differ from phonograph records in that the transcriptions are used for rebroadcasting and go at a different speed. I supervised the making of the transcriptions and the agency received a profit in the making of the transcriptions. That was added to the cost of the making of the transcription. The same is true as to the records. The rates that we charged the Ballards for the making of the records were regularly established rates. As agent for the Ballards I was always trying to get the best price possible, whether by way of radio time or cost of records. The reason that all calls for records were to come through me was because we wanted only one agency and so as to avoid any price cutting. I kept a record of money paid by the Ballards for all radio time on various stations and maintained these records for income tax purposes. One of the big values of radio advertising as against printing advertisement is that you build up a station audi-

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

ence. If the time of broadcast is switched you lose a certain amount of time of your "built-up" audience. Although instructions were given that the radio [360] transcription sent to the various stations should be returned to me, I would say that only about ten per cent actually were returned. That, of course, made it necessary for us to repress the number of transcriptions. The particular group to which these transcriptions were sent was supposed to pay for their own radio time and for the use of the transcriptions. That was supposed to be on a cash basis which is the normal practice in connection with radio. Many of the transcriptions we sent were for audition purposes for which no pay was received. I recall, in respect to a group in Detroit who had had radio time, that they never did pay and Mrs. Ballard paid for them.

Mrs. Ballard never talked to me about engaging in a scheme to defraud and I never engaged in a scheme to defraud by the use of the mails or otherwise.

After we contacted Canadian officials we received permission to broadcast over Canadian radio stations, but for some reason or other we didn't proceed with the broadcasting in Canada. It was my suggestion that all contacts with radio stations should be handled by me in order to avoid confusion. I was not a member of the I Am. I don't know that they even had a membership, but I did read a great deal of their literature and listened to

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

their broadcasts. All the radio transcriptions that went on the air at Los Angeles stations were paid for by the Ballards themselves. While our plan was that all payments would be received by me, some people nevertheless sent their payments to the Ballards. In 1938 the plan was changed and all radio cost and time went through the Ballard's books.

Redirect Examination

All the money that was received by us for the radio transcriptions were turned over by us to the Ballards but not the money received for the radio time. After the meetings of the I Am members became closed, I never received a card entitling me to [361] attend. Not every radio station would approve the transcriptions that we sent them. Their reasons were various.

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 47, the March 1939 issue of "The Voice", page 38.

Recross Examination

The Witness: Mostly, those stations were those who didn't take talks, speeches and lectures over the air. I don't recall any that were refused because of the inherent content of the record.

Redirect Examination

At the end of all radio transcriptions that I was in charge of, statements were made as to the various books published by the Saint Germain Press and where they could be obtained.

(Testimony of Ted Dahl.)

Recross Examination

I am not sure that such statement was made at the end of radio transcriptions but I believe in most of them.

DR. W. CURTIS BRIGHAM

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I am a physician and surgeon. I am a graduate of the University of Idaho and I studied in the Los Angeles College of Osteopathic Physicians and Surgeons. I have been admitted to practice for 34 years. I practiced in California. Government's Exhibit 140 is a picture of Mr. Kelly who was a patient of mine. He was a patient in 1934.

Exception No. 66

Over the objection of defendants on the ground that it was immaterial and not tending to prove or disprove any issue in the case and on the further ground of hearsay, and on the further ground that it was in effect an attempt by the Government to impeach its own witness, Mr. Crouse, the witness was permitted to testify.

The Witness: I examined Mr. Kelly in 1934 as a patient. At that time he was suffering from high blood pressure, the general [362] debility that occurs from high blood pressure, and severe toxema. I treated him the last time in November of 1935.

(Testimony of Dr. W. Curtis Brigham.)

After his death, I saw him at his home in Los Angeles. The body was lying on the floor. He was dead at the time. I prepared his death certificate and signed it. In my opinion Mr. Kelly died of coronary thrombus or coronary embolus. In other words, heart disease.

Exception was taken.

Cross Examination

The Witness: In November of 1935 when I last saw Mr. Kelly he was suffering from a pain in his eyes and I referred him to a clinic for treatment. When I saw his dead body it was not any different from any other dead body.

J. H. VAN METER

was recalled as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

Direct Examination

In the course of my investigation for the Post Office Department I made a recording of a radio program I heard on February 19, 1941. The voices I heard on the program were of Mrs. E. W. Ballard and Donald Ballard. Likewise, as to an I Am program on February 17, 1941. Both of these came over a local Los Angeles station, either KRKD or KMTR. I have a home recording set in my home. I have made transcriptions from time to time on this

(Testimony of J. H. Van Meter.)

home recording set. These recordings are true representations of the original program.

Exception No. 67

Government's Exhibit 181 was received in evidence over the objection of defendants that no foundation had been laid and on all grounds set out at the time of the offering of previous transcriptions identified by the witness, which by stipulation and order of the court were deemed as being objections without restating. [363]

Exception was allowed.

The Witness: Government's Exhibit 181 is the recording I made on my home set of radio programs of the I Am, one side being of date February 15, 1941, and the other, February 17, 1941.

Exception No. 68

Over the objection of defendants based on the same grounds as the offer of the record in transcription in evidence, which objection was by order of Court not required to be restated, the witness was allowed to play the record.

Exception was allowed.

(The following is a copy of the words played on said record, the witness identifying the voices as indicated.)

"Mrs. Ballard: And we understand that if we will continue to work constantly with every power at our command being called for the mighty activity of light from the ascended mas-

(Testimony of J. H. Van Meter.)

ters' octave in the use of the words 'I Am' and draw forth all of the power required to hold protection while there is yet time until all awaken into the happiness that they can have by giving obedience to the law of life that enables destructive qualities to be interfered with to the degree they are held under control and then ultimately dissolved. So as we give the following decree for the protection of our United States of America, we charge it forth into all the energies that have been charged constructively within our land and we ask you to join in the full almighty power of the protection and divine justice for which we call.

"Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of A thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Descend! [364] Descend! Descend! Descend!

"Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! America Now Descend!

"Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! America Now Command!

(Testimony of J. H. Van Meter.)

"Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Justice of Light of a Thousand Suns! Hold America in Thy Hand and by the full power of the Almighty Cosmic Light of the God Life of this universe place forth such an overwhelming action that none can resist the onrushing almighty Victory and eternal perfection of the cosmic light for the light of God never fails! The light of God never fails! The light of God never fails! And the Mighty I Am Presence is that light.

"Mr. Donald Ballard: The I Am Program has presented Mrs. G. W. Ballard——

"Messenger of the Ascended Master Saint Germain giving the instruction on the great law of life, the Mighty I Am Presence.

"We invite those who are sincerely interested to attend the classes on Sunday afternoon at the Shrine Auditorium at 1:30. It is necessary to be recommended by someone in the activity or give other satisfactory reference.

"For further information concerning this ascended master I Am activity read the books of the Saint Germain—Saint Germain—Saint Germain—the book—the book—the books—

[365]

Exception No. 69

Objection was made that the repetitious matter immediately above was obviously an imperfection

(Testimony of J. H. Van Meter.)

in the transcription made by the witness and the objection was made to the record on the further ground that it was not a true transcription. The foregoing was the transcription made by the witness on the 15th of February, 1941.

(Now follows the other side of the record which was the transcription made on February 17, 1941):

"Mr. Donald Ballard: —Messenger of the Ascended Master Saint Germain giving the instruction on the great law of life, the Mighty I Am Presence

"There are no money or political schemes in or back of this educational and patriotic activity. It is non-profit, non-political, and non-sectarian and is brought forth in the interests of the public good for the protection and illumination of America and all mankind. The hundreds and thousands of I Am students throughout America are the finest people in every community. They are staunch, fearless, determined, straight-thinking Americans who are banding together with a fierce loyalty for America and a relentless determination to free our country from every destructive activity.

"This ascended master instruction of the Mighty I Am presence is the law of every individual's own light based on the activity of light, energy and vibration. We invite those who are sincerely interested to attend the classes on Sunday afternoon at the Shrine audi-

(Testimony of J. H. Van Meter.)

torium beginning at 1:30. It is necessary to be recommended by someone in the activity or give other satisfactory reference. [366]

"For further information concerning this ascended master I Am activity, read the books of the Saint Germain series from the Saint Germain Press, Post Office Box 1133, Chicago, Illinois, or Post Office Box 428, Los Angeles, California.

"They are 'Unveiled Mysteries,' 'The Magic Presence,' 'The I Am Discourses,' 'The I Am Affirmations and Decrees,' 'The Ascended Master Discourses' and 'The Ascended Master Light.'

"The Monthly magazine known as 'The Voice of the I Am' in which these broadcasts are published, is for sale at the Sindelar Studios, 2600 South Hoover Street, Los Angeles, California.

"A Voice: Listen in each evening Monday through Saturday——"

(This record was all in the voice of Donald Ballard until the portion entitled "A Voice" which the witness testified was undoubtedly the voice of the announcer. The rest of the announcement was not played.)

RICHARD LEWIS BRONWELL

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I am 27 years of age. I reside in Riverside near Chicago. I first met Mrs. Ballard in our home in 1930. I met Guy Ballard in June or July of 1932 in the Ballard home at Chicago. Thereafter, I saw Mr. Guy Ballard again in the fall of 1932. Thereafter, I saw Mr. Ballard at least once a week, about two or three times a week, for the next two years, in our home or at the classes held in Chicago. My mother attended classes conducted by Mrs. Ballard and I would accompany her. I believe Mr. Ballard left Chicago in October of 1934. I commenced to work for the Ballards in September of 1935. Mrs. Ballard engaged me as a stock boy in filling orders and in keeping the stock in shape at the Saint [367] Germain Press in Chicago. Louise Majerus was in charge. I left the employment in July of 1936 and later went back again. I knew Donald Ballard. I received stock, wrapped all orders, kept inventory of the stock, that is, of the merchandise, books and magazines, and later, the records, pictures, charts, etc. I would ship these books and other articles to group leaders and other persons. Miss Majerus received the mail, opened the mail, read the letters, received all moneys and deposited the money in the bank and paid the bills. I went back to work in September of 1937 and then finally quit in November of 1938.

(Testimony of Richard Lewis Bromwell.)

In the spring of 1938 in the basement of the Saint Germain Press, Louise Majerus also being present, Mrs. Ballard told Louise Majerus and myself to get ready for a rush on the I Am Decree books because they were going to push the sale of them as they had about 10,000 of them on hand and Mrs. Ballard said she wanted to get rid of them so that she could bring out a new decree book. Following this there was an increase in sales of the decree books. Following this conversation with Mrs. Ballard, Miss Majerus told me that the group leaders would not continue to receive the usual thirty per cent discount.

Cross Examination

I came from Chicago under Government subpoena. I first met Donald Ballard at the time I met Mrs. Ballard in 1930. I am also acquainted with Mrs. Muriel Bliss. Since coming to Los Angeles I was able to refresh my recollection as to some of the matters I have testified to. I have referred to my testimony in Washington and have talked to other students relative to dates, also, the government men. The students that I discussed dates with were Mrs. Bliss and Mrs. Hill. In addition to shipping books to group leaders I would send them to individuals who might write for them, to retail stores such as Marshall Field, Macy's and Wanamakers. I didn't have much to do with the shipping [368] of books to the classes; they went directly from R. R. Downey (publisher). I also shipped books to Brentano's and to public libraries throughout the country.

MURRAY STOVER

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I live in Pasadena. I have lived there for about 35 years. I am a musician and play the cello and clarinet. I became acquainted with the Ballards in 1935 at their first class in Pasadena at the Shakespeare Club. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Donald were present. In the fall of 1935 I commenced to participate in musical work for the Ballard program and continued up until December of 1940. I played cello solos for various meetings and for the Minutemen's meetings and played the clarinet in the Minutemen band. I also arranged some trios and cello obligatos.

Exception No. 70

Over the objection of defendants that the matter was immaterial, the witness was permitted to testify that he was not paid for his work. Exception was taken.

The Witness: Just before the dismissal of a class that I had been playing for in the Shrine auditorium in the fall of 1940, while I was in the music room I heard Mrs. Ballard's voice. I had been in the music room about five minutes before I heard her. She was not in the room—she was in the hallway. I saw her in the hallway, the door was open. I heard a voice other than Mrs. Ballard's from beyond the door. This other person had stated to Mrs. Ballard that she found it difficult to do much with the work

(Testimony of Murray Stover.)

because people would not accept the spectacular and sensational. Mrs. Ballard replied that the spectacular and sensational drew the crowds and the larger the crowds the more the income. The other individual said, "But I can't seem to make them believe that." Mrs. Ballard replied, "I can make them believe and do anything I tell them." Mrs. Ballard also said that [369] most of the people would come to her on their hands and knees if she told them to. The other person had mentioned, as one of the statements that she could not make the people believe, was about the Master Hercules standing in the building or in the archway and an immense eagle hovering over the auditorium.

Cross Examination

I first related this conversation to one of our foremost group leaders, Ratana. I told her this, in the spring of 1941, about three or four months after I heard it. I quit the movement after I heard this conversation. Up to that time I was trying to be a devoted student. I think Ratana was out of the movement when I told her about that conversation. I told this conversation to Mr. Van Meter in the early part of this month. I went to his office in the Federal Building. I came to offer to testify in the case. I had not been subpoenaed. I was serious in my belief about this movement until I heard this conversation. I didn't confront Mrs. Ballard with the conversation. I presume when Mrs. Ballard said

(Testimony of Murray Stover.)

people would come to her on their hands and knees if she wished, that she meant that the people believed in her so implicitly and believed in the doctrines, that they would do so. Over the period that I was with the movement I heard Mrs. Ballard speak to hundreds of thousands of people. The audience was uslly 4000 to 5000. [370]

GEORGE THOMAS STEVENS,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I am an auditor for the State Board of Equalization. I became an "I Am" student in the fall of 1937 and disassociated myself from the movement right after the Shrine class of 1939 at about the time of the death of Mr. Ballard. I attended many classes and remember attending one where Mr. Ballard discussed a legacy that a young couple had obtained. It was in the middle of 1939 and took place at an evening meeting at the Wilshire group at the Ryan Dance Studios after one of the regular Shrine meetings. There was close to a thousand persons present.

Exception No. 71.

Mr. Neukom: What did Mr. Ballard say with respect to this young couple?

Mr. Cannon: Objected to as being immaterial, and not tending to support any issue in this case or any charge made in the indictment. There is nothing in

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

the indictment with respect to any advice as to legacies or inheritances, or anything of that kind or character.

The Court: At this time we will overrule the objection and note an exception to the defendants.

The Witness: Mr. Ballard said that a young couple had received a legacy and had foolishly invested it in a home when it would have been much better to have put it into the work, because they could have the use of that home for such a short time, in view of the fact that this general cataclysm would come in such a short time that they would have very little use of that home. I had heard Mr. Ballard mention a cataclysm prior to that date.

I was a hundred percent student and endeavored to live up to the teachings of the movement. I heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard discuss, while I was a student, the matter of ascension. [371] The first time was at the Shrine meeting in 1937 at which Mrs. Ballard was present. An explanation of the ascension was made. We were told that if we followed the teachings of the I Am books and lived according to the principles laid down therein, that we would be able to purify the physical body to the extent that it would become so estherial that it would rise at the time that the ascension was made; and we were told that it was perfectly possible to do that in this embodiment. I believed that at the time. I bought books that were being sold. I was told that the

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

incidents related in the books were true and real and I believed that. (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2297).

Exception No. 72

I would not have bought the books if I had felt that the incidents therein related were visionary.

Mr. Cannon: I move to strike it out until I make an objection.

The Court: It may be stricken.

Mr. Cannon: Objected to on the ground it is entirely immaterial and has no bearing on the issues in this case, because profit or loss is not an element at all in the case; and on the further ground that it is attempting to make it the basis of a civil fraud in which the rules of evidence are quite different than in a criminal case.

The Court: Overruled. Exception allowed.

The Witness: I heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard discuss the subject of precipitation on more than one occasion. I can't give a definite date only to say it was discussed at practically all the Shrine classes including the one I attended in 1939. Mrs. Ballard was present and it was discussed from the platform. She said that it would be possible, if we trained ourselves fully in the lines as laid down in the books, to so concentrate and have control over the elements, that we could at will visualize whatever [372] we desired and it would be materialized into the outer.

I remember distinctly Mrs. Ballard explaining to

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

us on a sunshiny day that it would be possible to look out and see these little shiny particles floating around in the air, that we had generally thought of as dust particles, that that was the elemental substance that was formulated to produce whatever we might be visualizing at the time, whether it might be clothes or homes or automobiles, or whatever it might be. I believed that at the time.

I am an auditor and deal with figures. I was present at a meeting the latter part of December, 1939, the week prior to the death of Mr. Ballard, when Mrs. Ballard was conducting the lectures. She stated to us that Mr. Ballard was out with Saint Germain doing special work and that was the reason that he was not on the platform. I later heard that he had died and after that I left the movement.

Cross Examination

I have had grade school, high school and a university extension course in certified public accountancy from the University of Minnesota. I completed my work there in 1923. I do not have a certificate. Since that date, I have been practicing accountancy, in one form or or another. I have been working for the State of California for six and a half years. I conduct sales tax audits. I had that position when I was an adherent of the "I Am" movement. I am accustomed to dealing with practical things and I am a Bible student. I have not engaged in theosophical research and have done practically no read-

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

ing of psychic literature. I had done no theosophical study before my association with the I Am movement and what I have done has been after my association. I do not feel that my association with the I Am movement has given me a better outlook on life. In many ways, I think it has harmed [373] me. In the first place, we had placed absolute confidence in these so-called messengers, and when we finally came to the conclusion as to how false they were, it was a tremendous shock to our spiritual being. We attended lectures from the beginning. With the one in December of 1937, we attended that all, that is those that were held at the Shrine Auditorium. That would be at least five. I attended group meetings once each week. They were conducted by Mr. and Mrs. John Rook in Inglewood. We also attended the Wilshire group meeting on Thursday and Sunday, so we went Monday, Thursday and Sunday to the group meetings, almost the entire time from 1937 up until December, 1939.

Mr. and Mrs. Ballard said, "Don't believe us, but prove us", and that is the thing we were trying to do. I believed the statements in respect to precipitation until shortly before the time we left, a short time before December, 1939. We bought some books right at the very start, because we were told that was the way we could learn. Our first book was purchased at the Christmas Shrine class during 1937. At that time I didn't have a firm conviction of the truth of the representations.

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

Mr. Cannon: Well, then, you didn't buy the books because of any belief you had in what they told you, did you?

The Witness: We did. After that first book that we bought, then we purchased each volume as it was brought forth. At the time we bought "Unveiled Mysteries", we had read the copy that was loaned to us to begin with, and at the time we bought the book we believed it, yes. We bought the first book because of our belief in what had been told us about the possibilities that there were—I had been searching for various truths of existence of life beyond which I had been able to—there were many questions I hadn't had answered for me by the orthodox church, and there still are. The Ballards told us that they had a law of life and that we should believe them—we should not believe them, but [374] we should prove them. That is what I was trying to do. I believed what they told me, and they told me that I could learn further from the books that they had. I believed that, and I purchased the books. What it was that I had been told and what I believed before I bought the first book is a rather difficult question. I believed what they said about ascension. Mrs. Ballard explained the ascension in the early stage of the class. That is what I heard, that was during December, 1937.

Q. No, no. I am talking about what they had told you about before December, 1937, before you bought the book.

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

A. I told you that that was the—our first contact was when we attended one meeting, or two meetings in the July class. Now as to that, we got just a very sketchy knowledge of what they had. We then had no further contact until the December class of 1937.

Q. What did they tell you prior to December, 1937 about ascension?

A. I don't recall. I have explained to you that it was just very sketchy, and that was our first real contact, was at that class. We merely attended one or two classes in July before we went East. When we came back and learned that they were having this next class in December, I went down with my wife to the class. Now, that is our first real contact with the movement, of which I have answered your questions. They told me that this matter of ascension depended upon our purification of our physical body. They told us all through that movement that unless and until our physical body had been so perfected it could not ascend. I never reached the stage where I thought I was entitled to ascend. Concerning precipitation, they told us that it would be possible for us, through concentration, to materialize from the elemental substance which was all about us anything that we desired in the nature of clothes, homes, automobiles, or whatever we might desire. [375] My first recollection of that was at the Shrine meeting in December, 1937. I never tried it. I be-

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

lieved that it would be possible at some time in the future.

Q. I thought you testified that they told you that if you would do that that you could instantly precipitate those things.

A. That is true. When we got to the point where we had so purified ourselves. At all the lectures I heard about precipitation. They always told us that that could not be accomplished by me or anyone else until I had reached the perfected stage. We had held before us the time when a meeting house would be precipitated. They never told us when that would be, but it was when people had arrived at a stage of perfection. I have read the Bible and I recall the Ballards calling our attention to the passage about having the faith of a grain of mustard. I don't recall their quoting the statement of the Master Jesus that if we had the faith of a grain of mustard seed we can say to yonder mountain, "Be removed", and it would be removed, but I can recall their referring to the mustard seed. I don't recall just what they said regarding the mustard seed faith.

I haven't discussed this matter with the Government officials since a year ago. Before I first appeared in the case, I discussed the matter with the United States Attorney and with the Post Office Inspectors. I had not heard of the "I Am Presence" before I heard the Ballards. I cannot give any more definite date than the year 1939 for the talk concerning the young couple. I don't recall

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

anyone who was there other than my wife. I could name plenty of possibilities. It was at the Wilshire group meeting, and in the absence of Mr. and Mrs. Rogers; Mr. Ernest Ricord conducted the meetings. I don't remember whether they conducted this one. The only thing I can say was that it was at a meeting after the Shrine class had closed. It was the custom of Mr. and Mrs. Ballard for a time, at least, after the Shrine class [376] was closed to come over either to this Wilshire class meeting or to one of the regular group meetings and give a talk. I don't recall whether Mr. Ricord was there that evening. Well, definitely Mr. Ricord was there.

Q. He was there, was he?

A. No, I withdraw that. In all probabilities, he was, but that is not definite. I withdraw that. The only one I can definitely and positively tell you was my wife. I think she was there.

Mr. Cannon: Reading from

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 44,

the December, 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, at p. 5:

> "It means this: There will be certain ones among the students for whom at the time of passing, not otherwise being able to complete the Ascension in this embodiment, the Purified Essence of the physical body will be drawn into the etheric body. In this way, they will be permitted to make the Ascension while the outer

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

structure, the discord of the human form remains here."

Q. Does that refresh your recollection that they told you, early in the proceedings, that the human form was going to remain here and not the whole physical body go into the ascension.

The Witness: From that time—that was a complete reversal of their original teachings to us. I regarded it as a reversal because of this fact: that there had been stated from the platform that Mr. and Mrs. Ballard were wholly pure and perfect and could make their ascension at any time they so desired. At that time there was nothing said about a special dispensation which this paragraph that you referred to explained. There seemed to be an abandonment of the original idea. I testified as follows at the previous trial.

"Q. I am still talking about the ascension, and [377] I asked you a while ago, and I will ask you again, if you ever heard any conversation about the outer form remaining?

"A. Never prior to the outcome of that discourse you just read.

"Q. Then you change your testimony at this time to say that never prior to that discourse?

"A. Yes.

"Q. I see.

"The Court: Was that discourse pronounced or called by somebody a departure from the

(Testimony of George Thomas Stevens.)

teachings, or did you feel it was a departure from the teachings?

"The Witness: It was a new development of the teachings."

Is that correct?

A. (Pause.)

"The Court: You didn't think that the old teachings had been deserted, did you?

"A. No, it was an unfoldment." (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2324)

That is not my belief at the present time. The thing that changed my mind is when you have a sober afterthought, you oftentimes draw conclusions and come to certain varied conclusions; and to me now at the present time it is a complete reversal. The testimony that you read was what I gave December 19, 1940, a year ago. I would not say that my memory is better now than it was then.

Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 13, the May, 1936 issue of "The Voice", at p. 13.

Recross Examination

They told us that in the ascension our physical body was to be drawn up into the finer body.

Mr. Cannon read from Government's Exhibit 25, the May, 1937 issue of "The Voice"; and from Government's Exhibit 21, the [378] January 19, 1937 issue of "The Voice", at p. 18.

CATHERINE ROGERS

was called as a witness in behalf of the Government and testified as follows:

I am the wife of Harry Rogers who was on the witness stand sometime ago. At one time I was a member of the Ballard staff, traveling around the country with them. I reside in Los Angeles at present. I first heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard and Donald in 1935 and I started traveling with them in 1936. I traveled three years with them. I met them in Pasadena in 1935, being introduced by Mr. Max Gysi. I started traveling with them in the fall of the year 1936. By that time we had come to know them personally. They left one of their big automobiles here in Los Angeles and asked us if we would drive it East for them, so Mr. Rogers and I did that for them. And when we arrived in St. Louis they invited me to sing on the platform, and Mr. Rogers to continue making the announcements as he had already been doing in the Pasadena class. I am a singer by profession.

Mr. Rogers started making the announcements for the Ballards at the Pasadena class. I was present when he was invited to do so by Mr. Ballard. Up to that time Mr. David Livingston had made the announcements, and Mr. Ballard asked Mr. Rogers if he would make the announcements at the coming class because things had not been going so well for them, the money hadn't come in, and would Mr. Rogers please now see what he could do in the announcements from then on, or at least for the com-

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

ing class, as we understood it. He did several classes and then they went East without us. They went to Sale Lake City or somewhere without us, and then on to St. Louis, and that is the time we drove the car East. From then on Mr. Rogers made the announcements. We ceased our affiliation the middle of 1939.

We traveled with them from the latter part of 1936 until that period in 1939 as a member of the staff. We did not receive [379] a salary. Occasionally, we received some love gifts from Mr. Ballard and sometimes something from Mrs. Ballard. For the first year or two, at the close of the classes, which would run ten days and there would be a week interlude, at the close of each of these classes Mr. Ballard, it got to be a habit with him, to come to my room and hand me an envelope in which there might be a hundred dollars, sometimes fifty, and towards the last as we traveled, the amount got smaller. I might say it would average $50 monthly, in that it was $100 sometimes and $10 towards the last. I contributed to the Ballard organization my time, energy, and full cooperation as far as I could as long as I could, and I also took part of the money that might be given to me and put part of it back into the love gift box out in the auditorium. That was after I became a member of the staff. Prior to becoming a member of the staff I made contributions to the Ballard organization. It was a matter of principle with Mr. Rogers and with me to give 10 percent of everything that was coming in

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

to us personally to what we considered a spiritual work. So we gave 10 percent of our income in 1935. It would be between $500 and $600. I bought Mrs. Ballard a $400 diamond wrist watch. However, the funds weren't entirely my own. They were funds I collected from students and added to them myself. On many, many occasions I bought her personal gifts ranging from a dollar to $15.00.

In the beginning, I wrote many of the words of the songs that appeared in the song books. I wrote some of the music. I was present at all of the classes. That was one of the things that was demanded of all of the staff members, that we should be present at the classes. I was always present. Donald Ballard was present at a great many of the meetings, but often I would sit behind the stage and often Donald would leave the building during the classes. I remember one occasion at a staff meeting at a hotel in Philadelphia, on one of our trips East, it must have [380] been early in 1937, at which Mr. LaFerrera, Virginia LaFerrera, Mr. Rogers and myself were present, besides Mrs. Ballard and Donald Ballard. Mrs. Ballard said that it was her wish that we all be present and that she wanted Donald to be present at the classes and remain during the class. He said that his car needed fixing, and she said that it didn't matter how many cars needed fixing, it was our duty to be there, the least we could do was to be there ourselves.

I purchased books during my association with the movement. Mr. Rogers would purchase them at the

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

Sindelar Studios. They were books of the Saint Germain Press. I would say I purchased about 30 sets of books. Originally the sets, the ones we gave out, consisted of "Unveiled Mysteries", "The Magic Presence", and "The I Am Discourses". There were more books coming out later and we would buy them more individually as they came out. We gave them to some of the public libraries and we had quite a run of time in which we put them on the battleships. I heard a conversation in 1936 between Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, in which Mr. Ballard started to say something about what he thought ought to be done with regard to the books, and Mrs. Ballard said to him, "I want you to remember that I am in full charge of the publications and you will please let the publication of these books alone and let me alone, too." Mr. Ballard once said to us just before the publication of "The Ascended Master Light" book in New York that he wished that Mrs. Mundy and Mrs. Ballard would not go ahead and get out this next book, that the students had so many books now that he wished that they would desist from going ahead. He definitely stated he wished they wouldn't do it.

I can remember a public talk that was given by Mr. Ballard in Philadelphia at a night class when Mr. Ballard got up on the platform. It must have been in 1939, and he said, "These messengers are perfect and cannot make a mistake, and if you see [381] any mistakes that you think they made a mistake, that fault is within yourself." I couldn't be-

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

lieve that. That was one of the first nights I could not definitely believe. I had heard that statement previously in staff dictations in which we were told that many times. I remember another instance in Seattle in 1938. We were told that in one of the so-called dictations. Mr. Ballard told us that Mrs. Ballard had no human passions, no human faults, could not feel anything but full perfection at all times, and the fact that they had just accused me of being jealous of Mrs. Ballard, and they said that was my own feeling and that I couldn't understand it; and Mrs. Ballard said, "Well, is it possible, Saint Germain, that I could feel anything like that?" and he said, "No, Lotus, you cannot feel anything but perfect emotion. You long ago attained that perfection." That must have been in 1938. (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2352).

I recall being present at a staff meeting at Denver, Colorado, in 1939, at which Mrs. Ballard accused Mr. Ballard of sending letters out to the students. Mrs. Ballard said to Mr. Ballard, "You are sending letters out to the students without my knowledge and without Mrs. Mundy's knowledge, and this cannot go on." Mr. Ballard answered back, and the conversation continued for almost two hours and finally at the close of the conversation Mr. Ballard said, "Well, I will quit if you want me to." At a staff meeting at Oakland, in the Lake Merritt Hotel in 1938, at which Donald and Marjorie Ballard were present, Mr. Ballard in one of the so-called dictations told me I would have to watch my

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

step, that I was becoming jealous of Mrs. Ballard and assuming too much authority. It was supposed to be Saint Germain's dictation. It continued for quite a long time. The dictations almost always lasted from one to two hours. The part I related lasted only long enough to say that. I came out of the room crying, and Donald and Marjorie Ballard came up to me. He took my hand and shook it, [382] and said, "I am all for you, Catherine. I know how you feel because my mother is the meanest woman on earth."

I recall a statement made by Donald Ballard regarding the woman students of the organization. It occurred in Los Angeles in one of the earlier classes. He was speaking to himself; "just to the air". He said, "I wish those darn students would keep away from me and let me alone."

Mrs. Ballard stepped through the curtain first at the meetings, then Mr. Ballard, and then Donald. Mrs. Ballard would then talk to the Mighty I Am Presence, then usually Donald Ballard, and then Mr. Ballard. Donald Ballard gave what he called his invocation to the Mighty I Am Presence. Then he usually shook hands with his mother and walked off the platform. I was usually behind the curtain or off to the side of the stage. Mr. Ballard would then speak. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard would then talk to the audience. The discourses would be received sometimes during the course of the talk or at the close of the talk and sometimes only once in seve[illegible]

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

weeks. I recall on one occasion observing Donald Ballard's actions during the time his father was receiving a discourse. I think it was in 1938, the first time in Detroit. It was behind the stage and I heard a dictation going on from Mr. Ballard. Mr. Rogers was present and the former Mrs. Ballard. I saw Donald looking at a "Popular Mechanics" magazine. Another incident would be at the Shrine Auditorium in 1938. The former Mrs. Ballard and myself were present back stage. I saw Donald go and come back with a bottle of 7 Up and drink it and look at a magazine called "Pic". At the time his father was speaking from the platform on the subject of the Law of Life and the Mighty I Am Presence and the Victory of America. It was a discourse.

In a dictation at Glacier National Park, Mr. Ballard said my voice would be heard around the world, that people would come from all over the world to hear me sing, that my voice [383] had such healing power that all I had to do was to sing for people and they would be healed. (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2380).

I followed the Ballards' teachings to the best of my ability at the time. I do not know of any healing qualities my voice has. I left the organization in 1939. Prior to the time I left my position as a member of the staff, I had a conversation with reference to my non-acceptance of the dictations. It occurred in Chicago between Mr. Ballard and my-

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

self. I told him that because of the contradictions in the work that was given out in the so-called dictations, I could no longer accept them because they were in contradiction, many points were in contradiction, one to the other, absolutely differently stated and didn't mean a thing, so I couldn't accept them. He said that if there were any contradictions, they were in my own mind and that I had better think very seriously before I dare leave the activity; that I would possibly lose my physical body within six weeks and I certainly would lose my voice and be a social outcast if I was sent home by them, if I could no longer believe what they said. I thought seriously about what I told Mr. Ballard and continued with them. I told him at that time if the difficulty was within myself, if all of these errors lie within myself, I would do everything humanly possible to try and believe everything they told me; that I would go on and wouldn't doubt anything they said to me. He told me I was very wise in making that decision. As I came out, Mrs. Ballard came up and caressed me and said, "I was very glad that you decided to give obedience," because they had been very concerned, they had seen that I wasnt believing everything I was told to believe and that she was glad I had made that decision at that time; that from then on I wouldn't doubt anything. In a so-called dictation that occurred that night, Mr. Ballard said, saying that Saint Germain was talking, that he was very glad that I and another member of

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

the staff would no longer doubt anything [384] that Mr. and Mrs. Ballard would say, because if we didn't watch our thoughts and feelings and have to be dismissed, that we would lose our physical bodies and would pass out in so-called death, and it could happen within six weeks' time from the time we were dismissed from the staff.

At a class meeting in Dallas, Texas, in 1939, Mr. Ballard said, "These two who are doubting my words will see themselves in abject poverty and humiliation. We have taken them out of the gutter and raised them up, and now they will be cast down again." About three weeks later I left the organization. I heard a statement made by Mr. Ballard in Washington, D. C., in 1938, at a staff dictation concerning retiring. He said, "Our income was sufficient last year that we could retire on the sale of our books without going on if we cared to do so."

Cross Examination

That occurred in Washington, D. C., in 1938. I couldn't say whether or not I had lost faith by that time. It followed my discussion with Mr. Ballard concerning doubting dictations. I believed what Mr. Ballard said concerning losing my physical body and not being able to sing again if I doubted. I was kept in the movement by reason of fear through 1938. I didn't make the statement that there was a dictation to the effect that Saint Germain was glad that those two who were doubting were not going to doubt any more. I couldn't answer the question

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

"yes" or "no" as to whether or not at the time Mrs. Bliss was dismissed or quit that I began to circulate gossip and stories about the Ballards. I don't know what you mean by "gossip". I spoke the truth. If it was true, I spread the truth about them. That occurred from the time Mrs. Bliss was dismissed. That was in May or June of 1939. I continued to travel with them until I got home to Los Angeles. I did not sit on the platform, but I still walked out, sang a song, and walked off again. I did not come to the conclusion I definitely [383] didn't believe. I didn't believe certain things, and some contradictions I couldn't accept.

Mr. Cannon: When did you come to the conclusion that you definitely did not believe it.

The Witness: I got over my fear complex, as you said, that I was held by fear, when Mrs. Bliss was dismissed, sir. That was in 1939. I recall the meeting of the group in Philadelphia at the Masonic Temple in 1939 when Mr. Ballard said that he and Mrs. Ballard were not capable of making any mistake. I did not believe the statement. I had come to the point where I doubted that. That might have been following Easter, about a month after Easter in 1939, because we were in Chicago at Easter time. Mrs. Bliss was dismissed at the Easter meeting in Chicago. I lost most of my faith before this Masonic Temple meeting in Philadelphia. I was getting over my fear then. I have known the Ballards since 1935. I didn't teach Donald piano lessons when he wore

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

knee pants. Last year in the testimony I was caught unawares, but they said knee pants, but he had a military suit on. I want to correct that. I did teach him piano lessons. We lived in hotels. I was virtually a member of their household, though they had no house. We lived in hotels for three years. I ate with them. What confidence they cared to share with us, we shared. I heard my husband make a good many of the announcements; he might talk as long as 20 to 40 minutes. He would talk until the Ballards arrived. He was instructed to keep on talking until they gave him the signal to quit. I believed he was sincere until the last couple of weeks. That is a difficult question for me to answer. He has answered that himself. I was behind the stage while he was talking. I heard his words rather than observed his manner. I don't know what you mean by the question whether I was living with him as his wife then. We were leading a celibate life under the Ballards' instructions. We were on terms of amity. I believe now that he was sincere. [386] My feeling that he was sincere continued up until Easter of 1939. (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2395).

When Donald said that his mother was the meanest woman on earth, I doubted it at that time and thought it was just an outburst of a young man. I am not bitter in this case. I would be glad to speak to the Ballards if they would speak to me, but they refuse to. I am friendly with Mrs. Hill and speak to her when I see her and Muriel Bliss. I have not

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

been visiting back and forth with her while she has been here. I speak to Mr. Gerald Bryan when I see him; I spoke to him in the hall during recess today. I ran into him. I did not maintain my home in Los Angeles on the $50 or $60 received. I was present when my husband conducted classes. Love gift boxes were maintained in the auditorium to put money into, but they weren't taken up. Deposits were made in these boxes the same as they were in any other meetings that I attended, but they were quite different from those conducted by the Ballards, because in the Ballard classes Mr. Rogers was asked to go out with the love gift envelope and show it to the people and show them how they could put their money in, and at Mr. Rogers' class there was scarcely a mention made of the money, there was no one there to present that side of it, that the boxes were just there if they cared to give. My husband conducted somewhere between 10 and 100 classes. I couldn't give any better estimate than that. The classes were conducted over a period from 1935 to 1939. I sang, played the piano, in the early days: read out of the books and welcomed the people when they came and said goodbye to them when they left.

Q. What happened to the love gifts?

A. Well, sir, after we traveled with the Ballards, Mrs. Ballard instructed us to use part of that to keep our expenses going. Before we started traveling, that is what we bought many of the books and part of the 30 sets of books with, with the love [387]

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

gifts. In other words, some part of the love gifts that were taken up at the classes conducted by me and my husband were used for the purchase of the books to give to the battleships. We didn't keep the rest of it. We never kept a cent of money until we went with the Ballards, and then we were told to keep our expenses going. The balance was spent in the Ballard activity by Mr. Rogers and myself. We did remit some to the Ballards. All of it that came in went to the books and the Ballard activity. Many times, we sent them cash. They didn't pay all of our household expenses while we were on tour. I did testify at the previous hearing that they paid our expenses while we traveled with the staff and that is correct. When asked if they paid all our living, I answered "My husband and I. The children at home were taken care of with the love gifts that we received from Mr. and Mrs. Ballard," but it isn't true, I am sorry. They came from the love gifts of the Ballard activity, if that is what you mean. (Tr. Vol. 15, p. 2404).

When Mr. Ballard gave the dictation about my being in the gutter and being raised up, in 1939, I did not believe it and come to the conclusion that he was just making it all up. That was about June in Dallas, Texas. That was after Mrs. Bliss had been dismissed.

I never made any report of any of the finances of any of the group meetings that my husband and I held. Mr. Rogers took care of all that. I didn't con-

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)

duct meetings without Mr. Rogers. We conducted meetings from April of one year until October the following year in our home, and then we rented a little auditorium. We stayed in our home until the following year, I think it was in November, when we moved in 1936. That covers 1935 and 1936. During that time, we had money paid in either as love gifts or whatever you want to call it, and I did what I wanted with that. No one called upon me for a statement as to what became of that money. No one told me to organize my own class. The class grew from a very [388] small group to a rather large one. I think it grew from 7 to 14 people, until when we left the movement, we had over 5,000 registered in the class. It had 900 people when it was conducted by myself and my husband up until October of 1936. It was then turned over to Mr. Ricord, and thereafter he conducted it up until the time he left the movement, except when we would be in Los Angeles, Mr. Rogers and I would go to the group. I never made any explanation at any of the classes as to the chart, not that I made a definite point of it. I may have explained it when I had been different places, but not as an explainer of the chart. I was a professional singer and sang on the National Broadcasting hook-up over KFI in Los Angeles before I went with the Ballards.

Redirect Examination

No dictations were given at the classes conducted by Mr. Rogers. I never noticed dictations given in

(Testimony of Catherine Rogers.)
any groups other than when Mr. and Mrs. or Donald Ballard were present.

EDWARD PERCY BAILEY,

called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I am 75 years in May next. I got the title "Colonel" as I was a medical officer for the British Government during the World War. I first met the Ballards in Los Angeles in 1935. I had a home in Long Beach at the time where they visited me. I had a history or a book in my home on the subject of one Saint Germain. Both Mr. and Mrs. Ballard indicated a desire to read it. I think it was "The Life of Saint Germain". At that time they had a book by the name of "Unveiled Mysteries" which they were offering for sale. I cant say that I was ever a definite member of the I Am movement. I visited the classes and their groups. I never had a card. I was present at the shrine class in 1935. Mr. and Mrs. Ballard were present. I had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard at that time in 1935. I happened to be behind the curtain when Mrs. Ballard was ready to go into the meeting and she incidentally said [389] to me, "Saint Germain came to us in his tangible, physical body last night at the Hotel Figueroa and he has instructed that you are to take over his work when we leave here." I believe it

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

was the third from the last meeting in their first session in the hall, Mrs. Ballard called me onto the platform and introduced me to the audience. There was a full house there. She stated the same thing, that Saint Germain had come to them in the Hotel Figueroa in his tangible body and instructed them that on their leaving I was to take charge of his work in this district.

After they left, I didn't conduct classes, but my work was to get the names of students who wanted to continue classes and the names of capable students to lead those classes or group meetings in their own homes. I received Government's Exhibit 182 through the mail. Thereupon

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 182

was admitted in evidence.

"Montclair Hotel,
"50th & Lexington Aves,
"New York, N. Y.
"Oct. 1, 1935.

"Col. Edward P. Bailey,
"1315 East Ocean Blvd.,
"Long Beach, Calif.

"Beloved Blessed Brother of the Light:

"Your several letters received and we note all you say. It is unfortunate indeed that the other members of the committee could not see the motive in your heart, which Saint Germain and we know to be pure and true as a diamond.

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

"We are deeply sorry for the confusion that some of the members of the Committee have permitted to drive in and cause this unnecessary and unfortunate condition. Unfortunately, most students do not know how to give [390] willing, loving obedience to the heart that is so sincere. Mistakes of the heart are one thing; mistakes of the head quite another. We know, Col. Bailey, that you have made no mistakes of the heart, which is after all the only important thing. If others do not recognize this we can but ask the I Am Presence to illumine them by Its Mighty Light that they may see only Its Presence and Light in everything you try to do.

"We know your intense sincerity to do the right thing and your motive has only been to do that which would guard the work and accomplish what Saint Germain and we had hoped might be done through the seven rays of the Committee, which however, did not include any very close personal friend of any one of that Committee.

"It was hoped that all might have been strong enough to have been the channel for an activity which under national crisis would be prepared and through which Saint Germain could give protection of even a physical nature to those who will need it under the cataclysmic condition which is coming. However, if their cooperation with you is not a glad free gift of Love

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

and of their own volition, he could not work through such a focus.

"The best thing to do, under the circumstances, is to dissolve the Committee entirely and in the future if Saint Germain cares to try the effort again I am sure he will draw to you through the I Am Presence, those whose love and loyalty will make them be in loving, willing agreement with the ideal in your heart, for which you so loyally stand."

* * * * * *

It is signed "The Ballards, by G. W. Ballard, Edna W. Ballard." [391]

Then the postscript:

"P. S. We are sending a carbon copy of this letter to each individual of the Committee and enclose herewith copy of our letter to them."

"EWB"

Attached is a copy of a letter from the Montclair Hotel, in handwriting above, "To the Committee Members," signed "The Ballards, G. W. Ballard, Edna W. Ballard."

* * * * * * *

"Unfortunately you did not see the motive in Col. Bailey's heart. For this we are deeply sorry. Blessed ones, there are mistakes of the head and mistakes of the heart. Col. Bailey has made no mistake of the heart, which is the

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

most important thing in human experience. What some of you felt was personal dictation is but a lifetime of habit which is the natural result of his service in the army and of a natural executive temperament. You must look deeper than your own personal ideas when a work of national importance is to be done. As we have stated to you so often, the Ascended Masters will never intrude any of their work upon the individual's free-will."

* * * * * * *

"It is for the best, as we have written Col. Bailey that the Committee be completely dissolved and each one hold to his own I Am Presence as closely as he can to maintain peace, harmony and Love within his own feelings toward every one else—Col. Bailey included. This is the only way that you can serve either your I Am Presence, Saint Germain, the Light or ourselves."

* * * * * * *

"If there are those among you who do not agree with [392] the ritual which Col. Bailey has issued to use, it is unfortunate, for no living being can read that ritual and not feel a tremendous Light and Love which is released when those words are spoken. I am sure every one of you have felt the radiation within them, for they contain many paragraphs of Saint Germain's own words, which are his flames of Love." * * *

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

A Commiteee was appointed by the Ballards to help me carry on. I received

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 183

through the mail two months later and thereupon said Exhibit was received in evidence.

"Washington, D. C.,
"November 26, 1935.

"Col. Edward P. Bailey,
"1315 E. Ocean Blvd.,
"President Apartments,
"Long Beach, Calif.

"Dear Col. Bailey:

"You are now dismissed from any further privilege or authority to serve the Messengers, Myself, or any other of the Ascended Masters in this embodiment.

"To willingly try to deceive earnest students seeking their freedom in the Light is unpardonable. You have made yourself a claw of the sinister force in coming into association with the Bernard woman. My pity goes out to you and Wayne Walker, for your complete freedom, for both of you was at hand when the Messengers were in Long Beach. There was so much good in both of you and now to allow it to be so distorted as has been done. Too late will you cry out in agony for the mistake you have made.

"Your earth span is very short. Make your

(Testimony of Edward Percy Bailey.)

peace with your God and call on the Law of Forgiveness while [393] there is yet time, less you deprive yourself of opportunity in the next embodiment. Do not try to bluff such deception through any longer, less you do this thing again in the next two embodiments."

"When you willingly put yourself under the red light, you cut off the White Light.

"My Love and hope goes out to you, that you may yet face about and calling on the Law of Forgiveness, call sufficient assistance to cut you free of this sinister claw.

"I Am making this one last attempt to help you. CHOOSE. The All-seeing Eye of God is upon you."

"SAINT GERMAIN"

At the time I received the last Exhibit, I was still organizing I Am groups, but not after receipt of it. [394]

DR. CLAUDE L. DAVISON,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I am a physician and surgeon. I graduated from the University of Illinois in 1926. I have been practicing in California since 1926. I had occasion to treat Guy W. Ballard. I first saw him two days preceding his death at his residence in Los Angeles.

(Testimony of Dr. Claude L. Davison.)

He was a desperately ill man, was markedly jaundiced, was not able to communicate, in other words, semi-delirious. His abdomen was markedly extended with fluid, and, apparently, it was a terminal condition, meaning that the end was near. I performed a paracentesis of the abdomen, which is tapping the abdomen for fluid. I was present at the time of his death, which occurred on December 29th (1939). It is my opinion that he had arterio sclerosis of the heart. Gradually you get changes in the various organs of the body due to congestion, congestion of the liver, and, as a result of that, he had secondary changes in the liver, producing what is known as cardiac cirrhosis. The ailments were of a progressive nature. Denegerative changes are over a period of years, from three to five years, although the patient may not be especially conscious of it except he is weak and tired from exertion. The secondary changes in the liver ordinarily come on within any place from six to eight months, even shorter periods of time, after the break in compensation; so apparently the break in compensation in his heart must have been present for at least three, four, five or six months. I made out the death certificate. I was informed he was 60 years, 4 months and 1 day old.

Cross Examination

On the certificate, I spoke of arterio sclerotic heart disease, date of onset not known. The certificate says cardiac cirrhosis of the liver, symptoms

(Testimony of Dr. Claude L. Davison.)

three months. In other words, I meant to say on the onset I didn't know whether it was two years or three years. No one is able to give a definite estimate [395] of that, so you have to date it—I mean, if there is no definite story as to the time of duration you put that down. I said symptoms for three months of the liver disturbance, approximately three months. It is correct that on any degenerative diseases of the heart, a person may have those for a period of many months or a number of years and never know it themselves. It is something just sort of creeps up on a person. The diagnosis with respect to his liver was made from my examination and the laboratory findings, which were consistent with a marked liver disturbance. The laboratory tests were made from blood taken from his veins. The matter of diagnosis of trouble without an autopsy is based upon clinical opinion, certainly, but not entirely when it is confirmed by laboratory findings. The man died of a liver disturbance, and whether it was due to a cirrhosis or whether it was due to a malignancy is beside the point. I mean, he had a liver disturbance. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2442.)

DR. FRED B. MOOR,

being called as a witness on behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I am a physician and surgeon and have been such since 1920. I graduated from the University of

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

North Dakota and the College of Medical Evangelists. I have been practicing in California since 1920. For the last five years I have been teaching at White Memorial Hospital. My specialty is therapeutics. I am professor of pharmacology and therapeutics in the medical school. I am the Director of Physiotherapy in the hospital, that includes the use of water, light, electricity in the treatment of disease, exercise and massage. It includes light which gives off heat and radiation. I am not in any wise affiliated with the I Am movement, nor acquainted with any of the defendants. The medical profession to my knowledge does not consider that the color blue has any therapeutic value. This is my opinion, which is based upon my studies and knowledge and readings and [396] experience. In my opinion, the color blue does not have any therapeutic or healing value.

I have made no special study of sound waves in connection with healing. The present medical profession is studying the super sonic-sound waves in the treatment of disease. I am not familiar with the findings, but that has been worked on in recent years. I have not utilized any such studies.

Cross Examination

Violet does not have any therapeutic value any more than blue. I have never taken a special course on color so far as therapeutical value is concerned, nor made any special research on that myself. I have studied the literature. I am not acquainted

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

with the work of Kenneth M. Swezey, nor am I acquainted with the work of Dr. Harvey C. Rentschler. I know that ultra-violet rays are used for the destruction of bacteria. Ultra-violet ray is invisible. It is called violet because it is beyond the violet end of the spectrum. The ultra-violet rays are the same kind of waves as any other color waves that are in the so-called higher brackets. The ultra-violet rays do have some therapeutical value. I have not made any study of the effect of blue dyes for burns. I have heard of Robert Henry Aldrich of the Harvard Medical School. He is a man skilled in his profession and I would take his word as to the truthfulness of his findings on that. I haven't read his article in the Reader's Digest for November, 1941. Said article at page 97 of the November, 1941 copy of Reader's Digest was marked

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT CC

for identification. The article is condensed from Hygeia, a magazine well known in the medical profession. Whereupon, Mr. Cannon read the following from said artcle:

> "Back in 1933 Dr. Robert Henry Aldrich of Harvard Medical School started a search for a burn remedy that was crust-forming, non-scarring, and a [397] powerful germicide as well. He experimented with a variety of antiseptics, finally coming to the aniline dyes. At last he produced an effective combination of

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

three different dyes: crystal violet, brilliant green and neutral acriflavine. Using this mixture on burned patients in Boston City Hospital, he has reduced mortality in serious burns from 34 percent to 8 percent."

I am familiar with the triple-dye treatment. It isn't the color that cures the burns. These dyes are astringent and lessen the excretion of fluid from the germs. Besides the purple, blue and aniline dyes, there was mentioned the acriflavine dyes. They are yellow.

Q. Could any other kind of dyes be used equally as well for curing burns?

A. Yes, red dyes like mercurochrome. Mercurochrome doesn't have the other effects of the dye, that is, it doesn't have the astringent effect of the dye as the triple-dye treatment has. In the dyes there are certain organisms that take up certain dyes. They take up purple dye, and the fact that they absorb the dyes kills the organism. It isn't the color of the dye, itself. The color of the dye is a property of the dye. The purple dyes do in this triple-color treatment what other dyes won't do, but not from the basis of color. I say that because they have this astringent action which is just as important in burns as any other property. It is true that Lavoris has a mild astringent action; it doesn't have the same effect as purple and aniline dyes.

I am not familiar with the address of Dr. Robert Henry Aldrich at the American Medical Association

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

convention held in June, 1941. Thereupon, an article from "Time" of June 16, 1941, was marked for identification as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT DD. [398]

"This press story of last week might have been the text for a lecture on burns which Harvard's Dr. Robert Henry Aldrich gave at the A. M. A. Convention.

* * * * * * *

"At the Cleveland meeting last week, he urged his colleagues to try his purple and green dyes. In Boston City Hospital, he reported, he has reduced the mortality rate from serious burns from 34% to 8%.

* * * * * * *

"As soon as the dye covers his exposed nerve ends, all pain stops.

"As fast as one coat of dye dries, another is applied, until the patient looks as though he were covered with a light, flexible coat of purple leather. Then he is kept at a temperature of around 85 degrees F. The dye protects the raw flesh, and kills all bacteria."

The Witness: I know that color is used in psychiatry to a certain extent. It is the color that has the quieting effect upon the nerves. It does have some therapeutical value on nerves and I would like to call your attention to the fact that it is only

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

through the medium of the retina of the eye that it has any effect.

Q. Does light blue in the treatment of nervous disease have any therapeutical value?

A. Blue in a room has some calming effect on the nervous system. If the walls are all covered with it, it does have a calming effect on the nervous system. Red has quite a reverse effect on people suffering from mental disorders. Through the medium of vision, violets, blues and the light yellows, and so forth, have a soothing effect upon the nerves. That is true [399] whether people are crazy or not, but they have to be more or less of a nervous temperament for color to have any effect upon them. I would not say that light pastel shades have any therapeutical value to one of your apparent mentality. The tubular mercury vapor lamp doesn't have a complete spectrum. It runs the full line of the spectrum but it doesn't have radiations. It has a lot of ultra-violet, for instance. It is short, however, in reds, oranges, and yellows. The color you see is mostly purplish and blue. It has a therapeutical value, but not from its blue color, but from the ultra-violet content of the spectrum. Ultra-violet radiations have long been a weapon in fighting disease germs. Very recently it has been discovered that by the use of the tubular mercury vapor lamp which gives off a violet color, that these death rays are projected into food to preserve it, but not from the standpoint of the violet color; from the ultra-violet radiations con-

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

tained in the mercury spectrum. I say that without having made a special study of color, but I know something about colors from a study of the literature, which is classified as research by the way. Sound waves can be transmuted by stepping them up into light waves, and light waves can be transmuted into sound waves by cutting them down if you get them low enough frequency. The difference between a light wave and a sound wave is that a light wave is an electromagnetic vibration and the substance we visualize as ether, we think of as ether, and a sound wave is alternate condensations and rarefactions of the air. I wouldn't say that the only difference between a sound wave and a light wave is the speed at which it travels. There is a difference in quality entirely. A sound wave is a very short wave, very rapid vibration far above any of our sound waves, whereas a sound wave is just alternate condensations and rarefaction of the atmosphere produced by some vibratory motion, but you can transmute to the other by stepping [400] up or lowering the vibration. It isn't true that the only difference between sound waves and light waves is in the speed of the vibration, it is a difference in the rate of travel. The ultra-violet radiation in the rays given off by mercury vapor lamps has an effect on the human body. It is not exactly known how bacteria are destroyed by these rays. It is thought to be due to the vibratory action of the radiation on the organism. I suppose that is purely

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

theory. It is theory, too, that it is the rate of vibrations which determines the therapeutic effect of rays. The statement "Color might be defined as a material which selectively absorbs radiant energy or that absorbs and which reflects various wave lengths of light which it does not absorb" is true. The statement, "In general, the emotional effects of color on man are: Reds and adjacent colors exert an exciting stimulating influence" is correct in so far as such colors have any physiological effect. Most of the effects of the reds and yellows and rays in that general part of the spectrum is heating and not from the color present. I think that the statement, "In general, the emotional effects of color on man in yellow is the exciting influence merges into a cheering influence and then begins to overlap a tranquilizing influence which extends from yellow-green through violet-blue and is gradually replaced by a subduing influence which extends from the blue through violet and into purple" is correct. I don't know whether the statement "with the exciting influence beginning to reappear in the mid-purples" is true or not.

Thereupon, it was stipulated that the following statement is correct: "Scientific studies are disclosing many secrets concerning color and practical application of this knowledge is helping the world to emerge from its drab cacoon into a butterfly-hued existence that might be well termed the age of color." I don't know whether plant life grown

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

under a glass will be [401] resuscitated by putting it under a blue lamp. I don't know the effect of blues or violets in the stimulation or lack of it in growth in plant life. I wouldn't admit that color itself would induce sleep. They do put it in hospitals and in recent years there has been a great tendency toward decorating hospitals with light shades. It is true that a room in light colors is more cheerful, and from that standpoint has a psychological effect on the patient. By that, I mean a mental effect on the nervous system. We would have to concede that it is the color that does that indirectly and induces sleep. Color is one of the contributing factors to relaxation and sleep. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2475.)

Redirect Examination

I do not believe that the color red in the American flag has excitable effect upon a person.

Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 141, the September, 1938 issue of "The Voice."

I do not know of any color radiations that would be given off from the playing of Government's Exhibit 150-A of therapeutic value. I doubt if it would have very much effect to place a patient suffering from some sort of psychosis in a light blue room. I would not expect it to have any different effect than if he were placed in a rose color room.

Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 28, the August, 1937 issue of "The Voice," page 18, also from Exhibit 8, "Ascended Master Light," page 396.

(Testimony of Dr. Fred B. Moor.)

There is an infra red ray in physiotherapy treatments, which is not visible, just as ultra violet is not visible. It is used for treating people for various ailments. There is no detrimental effect in treatment of persons with mercurochrome because of the fact that it is red. In using ultra-violet, or infra red rays in the hospital, we use some sort of a lamp, which [402] excites energy from electrical current. Between ultra-violet and infra red rays, there are the so-called color rays. Of the color rays which I have mentioned, in my opinion, those near the middle of the spectrum, the blues, greens, and probably also the indigo and the violet are the least beneficial therapeutically.

Recross Examination

I am somewhat acquainted with photosynthesis. That is the name given to the manufacture of starch by plants. They get the light rays through their leaves. It is the color of blues, indigos and violets that stimulate the plant growth.

Mr. Cannon read from Government's Exhibit 28, page 18.

DOTTIE D. FOWLER,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows: (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2495.)

I reside in Seattle. I first heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard from the platform in Seattle in 1935. Mr. Ballard stated during the class that Saint Germain

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

was the authority of this planet for the next 10,000 years and that the three Ballards were his messengers. He told us of ascensions. He said there had been three ascensions in the United States and that he had witnessed two ascensions. He told us of his experiences in the Royal Tetons and in the Cave of Light. The Cave of Light was in India where he passed through this Cave of Light and had his body purified and came out with a purified body and a body of immortal endurance. He also stated that he had long since passed the age of three score years and ten. He told of precipitations, mentioned the cataclysmic activity that would come and the part that America would play in the coming golden age. They had a picture on the platform of Saint Germain, a large picture, the same one that is in "Unveiled Mysteries."

I had a conversation with Mr. Ballard concerning the figures on the picture of Saint Germain during the 1937 class in Seattle in the I Am reading room there. At first we had been [403] asked many times, and so I asked Mr. Ballard, and he said they were not permited to give out that information, Saint Germain hadn't given them permission. I first purchased copies of the publications "Unveiled Mysteries" during the 1935 class and put in orders for other books that were to come off the press, "The Magic Presence" and "The I Am Discourses." Thereafter, I established a reading room in Seattle, and remained in charge of it from 1936 to January,

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

1940. Classes were held there by the Ballards in 1935, 1936, 1937 and 1938. Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere conducted classes in Seattle. Mr. Stickell conducted his classes in May or June of 1939 and August of 1940. Mr. Cassiere was there in 1936. He has been there four or five times. He was there for a ten day class in 1939 and also 1940. When I say he was there, I mean he was conducting a class. I attended the Shrine class in June and July of 1938. Before the classes that were conducted in Seattle by the Ballards or by Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere, I sent out pamphlets advising persons of their coming. I sent out from 5,000 to 10,000 for the Ballard classes. They were received from the Saint Germain Press. I paid the postage out of the reading room. I don't think over 1,000 or 2,000 notices were sent out to announce the Stickell classes. We paid for the mailing of those.

The Court: You have asked the witness if she paid for this, and the witness' answer is that "we paid for it."

The Witness: I have a way of thinking that myself and my higher mental body and Mighty I Am Presence are one, and I say "we." It is a habit of mine. So I will correct that. I mean I paid for it out of reading room funds or out of our personal funds if we didn't have enough from the reading room.

Mr. Lazarus: I believe you stated that they were mailed out with your own personal funds. How

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

much money would you estimate that you put in the work of the I Am or Ballard organization [404] during your entire association from 1935 to 1941?

The Witness: It would be around $2,000. It was spent for paying rent, for books, for magazines, for pictures, charts, whatever was needed. I have read the foreword of the book "Unveiled Mysteries," stating:

> "I wish to say, that these experiences are as real and true as mankind's existence on this earth today, and that they all occurred during August, September, and October 1930, upon Mount Shasta, California, U. S. A.
>
> "GODFRE RAY KING."

That was one of the representations that caused me to buy the book "Unveiled Mysteries."

I read that portion of the foreword of "The Magic Presence" reading:

> "This book contains the second group of experiences which I was privileged to have through the Love and assistance of the Beloved Ascended Master, Saint Germain."

I believed that representation when I read it and it was one of the representations which caused me to devote my time, energy and money to this movement. I read that portion of "The Magic Presence" which states:

> "The retreats, people, and instruments which I saw and associated with while with the

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

> Ascended Masters are real physical places and things and tangible living breathing beings. They were not imaginary or symbolic and are not to be interpreted in any such way."

I believed the truth of that when I read it and it was one of the representations that caused me to continue in this work and contribute money to this organization. When it was represented [405] in volumes published by the Saint Germain Press that Donald and Mrs. Ballard had actual physical adventures with the ascended masters, I believed that those defendants did have such adventures. It was in part on the basis of those representations that I continued to purchase books of the Saint Germain Press and devote my time, energy and money to the Ballard organization. The students of the I Am in Seattle put on radio transcriptions for the Ballard organization during my association with the group. I had charge of that work in Seattle in a way. Mr. Dahl handled that. Mr. Dahl was in Los Angeles, but he corresponded with me in Seattle. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2511.) The transcriptions went on every week for a year or two years. The last time the Ballards came to Seattle we had the transcriptions on. They had announced the fact that the Ballards were going to conduct a class in Seattle. The transcriptions before the Stickell classes announced the fact that he was going to conduct classes and the time and place. They were put on before the Cassiere classes, announcing the time and place.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Prior to the Cassiere classes I had correspondence with Ted Dahl relative to what announcements should be made after the playing of the transcriptions and also as to what announcements that were to be made prior to the Stickell classes.

I was in Los Angeles in 1938 for the Shrine class. During the class I had a conversation with Betty Mundy regarding radio time in Seattle in the lobby of the Shrine Auditorium. Just the two of us were present. Mrs. Mundy told me the messengers were coming to Seattle, which we knew, and she wondered what the Seattle people were going to do about putting on seven broadcasts for Mrs. Ballard previous to the class, and she wanted to know if I would take the responsibility. I asked her, "What is the responsibility? How much will it cost?" She said, "That doesn't make any difference. Seattle must wake up. You are not [406] spending enough money up there. Look at the thousands of dollars they are spending in California and in New York, and you folks will just have to wake up and do something. Will you take the responsibility or will you not?" We had a couple of conversations along that line, just repeating that over and over again. Thereafter I arranged for personal broadcasts for Mrs. Ballard in Seattle. She broadcasted from the Music Hall during the class. Thereupon

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 185

was admitted in evidence. Said Exhibit reads as follows:

"Lake Merritt Hotel,
"Oakland, Calif.,
"August 22, 1938.

"Mrs. D. D. Fowler,
"613 Orpheum Bldg.,
"Seattle, Washington.
"Blessed One of the Light:

* * * * * * *

"We are asking Mr. Dahl to send direct to the Station the proper announcement to be used on the regular transcriptions making mention of the coming class, so you need not be bothered with that—it should come through Mr. Dahl, and we will ask that he have it there for next Sunday's broadcast.

"Answering your inquiry as to whether Don and Marjory will be with us in Seattle, Saint Germain has requested that Don finish his flying before going East again, and this will necessitate his being in Los Angeles; much as they both would love to come to Seattle, but his flying time has been so interrupted, that he must now devote every minute to that.

* * * * * * *

"THE BALLARDS
"By MRS. G. W. BALLARD" [407]

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

I recall Mrs. Ballard making the statement during the Shrine class concerning precipitation. She made the statement from the platform during the class. She said that she had precipitated jewels of light in her own hands, and that if she were cast on a desert island and she only had a glass of water and a toothpick she could precipitate anything she needed or wanted. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2520.) I had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard in her room at the Gowman Hotel in Seattle in 1938. Mrs. Ballard said, "We are not ordinary human beings. We may appear as that, but we don't dare tell the students who we are. When I can step up into my higher mental body, I can wield power without limit." She also said that she was going to ask Daddy Ballard that night to dismiss Catherine Rogers from the staff, that she would not go on the stage in the Chicago Theatre with Catherine Rogers. She also said that if Saint Germain would dismiss Catherine Rogers and release his radiation from her, that she would never be able to sing another note as long as she lived. Mrs. Ballard made the statement from the platform during the Shrine class in 1938, 'We have now—Saint Germain says we have a million people in this light, and by the first of the year we would have two million more, which would make three million people." She said, "Just wait until we have three million people in this light and see who governs the United States of America."

I was a group leader in the activity in Seattle and

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

also had the reading rom. I received Government's Exhibit 186 in my capacity as group leader from the Ballards through the mail. Said exhibit thereupon was admitted in evidence.

I received Exhibit 187 as group leader through the mail from the Saint Germain Press. Thereupon Exhibit 187 was admitted in evidence.

I received Exhibit 188 from the Saint Germain Press through the mail. Thereupon said exhibit was admitted in evidence. [408]

I gave decrees at my I Am group meetings. They were given phrase by phrase. I would repeat a phrase and then the group would repeat it after me. I would read the phrase from my decree book. The students didn't have the books; they repeated after me. I received

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 189

through the mail. Thereupon said exhibit was offered in evidence. Said exhibit reads as follows:

"THE BILTMORE HOTEL

"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Oct. 8, 1940.

"Mrs. D. D. Fowler,

"'I Am' Reading Room,

"New Orpheum Bldg.,

"Seattle, Wash.

"Beloved One of the Light:

"I have been wanting to get a letter to you for several [409] days, but because of the

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Shrine Class taking up so much of the days it has been impossible.

"Word has come to us for sometime thru several different sources that the Seattle Students are not using their Decree Books in the Groups or issuing the Decrees the way the rest of the country are doing; that they are repeated phrase by phrase after you read them. I could not believe such a thing was possible and did not accept it at first, but since so many reports have come I must take action.

"The necessity of releasing the energy thru the Group reading the Decrees in unison at a rapid tempo is so great that I write to ask that you do this at once. This we have found releases so much more energy and gives each one an oportunity to be a part of the activity, so to speak.

"I understand you claim Daddy gave you permission to read them phrase by phrase, but that was before the new Loose-leaf Decree book came out. Now that these Loose-leaf Decrees are out everybody can have them and it is imperative that they be used the same as they are all over the country. I regret I did not know this sooner, for this is a powerful activity as you will find once you begin to use it.

"Our Beloved Brother Bill is coming up your way, as you doubtless know. I am glad he is going to give you a ten day class and this should help to stabalize the student body and

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

bring peace and harmony; especially as you begin to give forth these Decrees with dynamic power. It is only thru the release of the energy that your city and America can be protected.

"Our Shrine Class closed with the usual Blaze of Glory, only with more intense action. So much greater harmony [410] was held during the class and so much more obedience given from the student body that it enabled much to be accomplished that has not been possible before. I know you must have felt the Radiance for it has been tremendous.

"This is not a scolding, but it is so imperative that these Decrees get into the atmosphere to save your city, as well as America. Not one moment should be lost in idle conversation or gossip, but every bit of energy should be put into those Decrees thru intense feeling and enthusiasm which releases a power that is not otherwise done. I know all will gladly cooperate with you in this as they are waiting for the oportunity to render this service. "My Love and Blessings enfold you always, and may that Light as of a Thousand Suns flood your beings and worlds, and the Mighty Herculese charge you with His Courage, Strength and Energy that you may go forth into your Victory in the Light quickly.

"Sincerely in the Light,
"MRS. G. W. BALLARD
"MRS. G. W. BALLARD (signed)"

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

I received the decree book from the Saint Germain Press. I had between 300 and 400 decrees. I don't know whether they are all in the book or not. Thereupon said decrees were offered and admitted in evidence as Government's Exhibit 190. The pages were received from the Saint Germain Press. I paid two cents a sheet for them and placed them in a binder. I bought the binder for $1.25 from the Saint Germain Press.

Mr. Cassiere appeared in Seattle after the letter dated October 8, 1940 (Government's Exhibit 189) was received, and conducted a ten day class there. I had a conversation with him with reference to the manner in which the decrees should be given. [411] I showed him the letter and told him that Mr. Ballard had often said you could give the decrees either phrase by phrase or read them. "Well," he said, "you know why they want to read the decrees, don't you? So everybody will buy a decree book."

In the reading room and sanctuary in Seattle, I had the following material from the Saint Germain Press, Inc.: a large chart and flame-in-action. That cost $200 each. We had a small flame-in-action, which cost $50.00 plus express. The machine which you have in court appears to be a small flame-in-action. Thereupon, said machine was admitted in evidence as Government's Exhibit 191. In addition, we had a large chart, $15 chart, a large picture of Mr. Ballard and two smaller pictures of Mr. Ballard. The large picture was $25; the smaller ones

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

were $2.50 or $3, I don't recall. The money for the large charts, the charts and the flame-in-action was given to me by one student. The rest of the money for the purchase of the other matter was from my personal love gifts from the students or their love gifts, or they would buy them and bring them in, the pictures. Some of my personal money was used for that. We also had volumes published by the Saint Germain Press in the reading room. I received them from the Saint Germain Press at the regular discount of 30%. I have also visited reading rooms in Los Angeles, San Francisco, and Oakland. They were all similar, as far as I know. I didn't go into their stock. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2553.) Government's Exhibit 188 was purchased from the Saint Germain Press. I do not recall its price.

I had two conversations, one in 1936 and one in 1940, with Mr. Cassiere in Seattle relative to his dismissal from the I Am work.

Exception No. 73

In 1936, he told me that Mrs. Ballard flew from California—I think it was to Cleveland—with a letter from [412] Saint Germain to dismiss him, and he said he challenged her and she said, "Why, Bill, how dare you challenge me." He said, "During the course of our conversation you just admitted that Saint Germain has been in Europe for three months and you haven't been in contact with him, so I refuse to be dismissed. I am a messenger of Saint Germain, ascended or unascended."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Mr. Peterson: I am going to move to strike the answer of the witness upon the ground it is not within any of the issues of this case, and if there were any binding force at all, it wouldn't be binding upon anybody but Mr. Cassiere. It seems to me to show, if anything, a lack of concert of action and not the participation in the plan or scheme alleged by the Government.

The Court: Overruled. Exception.

The Witness: Mrs. Ballard made references from the platform to love gifts in the Shrine class in 1938 or 1939, possibly both. She said that Saint Germain knew every piece of money that went into the love gift box and knew who put the money in and the motive that was back of the gift. Mr. Cassiere autographed certain books in the Seattle class of 1936. He said of these books there would be a different radiation than the other messengers, of course, but he had lived in the home of the messengers and close to Saint Germain, and his radiation would mean a great deal in autographing the books. We had boxes out in the lobby for love gifts during his class. The love gifts would be placed in the boxes. I gave him $200 at the conclusion of the class. The money was clear to him. He asked me if that was all he was to get and I said yes.

Exception No. 74

I sent Government's Exhibit 192 to Mr. Dahl, on or about April 30, 1939.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Mr. Cannon: Objected to on the ground that it is hearsay. [413]

The Court: Overruled. Exception.

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 192

was received in evidence and reads as follows:

"613 Orpheum Building
"Seattle, Washington
"April 30, 1939

"My dear Mr. Dahl:

"We are to have the privilege of having Paul Stickell for a ten day class here in Seattle, and Mrs. Ballard has given her permission for an announcement to be added to our transcription program.

"Mr. Stickell has just written me, requesting that I get in touch with you, asking you to send to KOL, the announcement of his coming. As he has said, the time is short, and we will both greatly appreciate your sending the announcement to KOL immediately. The information is as follows:

"Place: Moore Theatre
Second Ave. and Virginia St.
Seattle, Wash.

"Time: June 9 to 18, 1939 Inclusive
EXCEPT Friday, evening,
June 16, 1939
Twice Daily,—1:30 and 7:30

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"Will you let me know when you have sent the above information to KOL?

"Thanking you, I am,

"Sincerely yours,

"MRS. D. D. FOWLER"

Mr. Stickell autographed books at the class in Seattle. He said concerning the autographing of books that he was an appointed messenger and it was different from radiations of [414] the accredited messengers, and there was a certain blessing registered in the book when he would autograph the books. Mr. Stickell said during the class that if anything happened to Mrs. Ballard the whole planet would go down. (Tr. Vol. 16, p. 2581.) Mr. Stickell said during the 1939 class that there would be no war in Europe, that Saint Germain would keep war out of Europe.

He told us how the sinister forces had tried to keep this light from going forth. He stated in Chicago whenever he would have his plate set before him or try to eat, the sinister force would project poison germs over his food and that they resembled little black flies, and it would take him an hour to dissolve them by pouring light on his food so he could eat it, and the food would not poison him.

Mr. Peterson: I couldn't tell what the answer would be. I move to strike it upon the ground it is not germane to any issue in this indictment. It doesn't tend to prove or disprove any possible fact with which we are here concerned. There is nothing

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

in the indictment relative to any such conversation at all.

The Court: Overruled.

The Witness: He was just telling of the struggle he had in the beginning, how the sinister forces tried to put out their light and try to keep them from carrying this light by poisoning the food. It was stated by him that the black germs were in the invisible plane. I believed the statement at the time it was made, and it was one of the many statements which caused me to continue in this movement, to devote my time, money and energy to the work. I gave Mr. Stickell $350 for the ten day class in Seattle. I did not pay any of the rental for the group. The workers for this Seattle class were not paid. They worked gratuitously. [415]

I received

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 193

through the mail on or about the date it bears. Thereupon said Exhibit was offered in evidence. Said Exhibit reads as follows:

"Biltmore Hotel
"Los Angeles, California
"March 15, 1940

"To The 'I AM' Reading Rooms and
Group Leaders

"Beloved Ones of the Light:

"* * * * *

"Remember we stand absolutely one hundred percent with the Books of the Saint Germain

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Series, the 'Voice of the 'I AM'' and the Dictations given thru our Beloved Messenger, Mr. G. W. Ballard. Anything else has no place in this Activity and is not coming from the Ascended Masters.

"Recently several purported dictations, (of which we have copies) claiming to be from Saint Germain and Our Messenger, have been circulated and some published. I again wish to go on record and state Saint Germain's own statement made publicly from the platform in several dictations as early as 1936 was that whenever He or any of the Ascended Masters chose to dictate or give information or instruction thru any other channel than His Messengers, Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Ballard and Donald, He would first advise the Messengers and the student body. No such corroboration has come from Him—His Word is good enough for us, how about you!"

"We leave it to every student to choose that which he or she wishes to accept and read. Each has free will, but if after being prompted, having studied and been under this Radiation, you claim to be a Group [416] Leader, yet have not called forth Ascended Master Wisdom and Discrimination enough to detect these things and you fall for them because they are claimed to be genuine, you truly are not a Group Leader. If

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

thru the lack of sufficient understanding you accept those foolish things, then you are of no value to Saint Germain, This Work, to us in carrying it thru to Victory, or the protection of America.

"The book—'I AM America's Destiny' recently published by Bob LeFevre and Pearl Diehl is not authentic and was not dictated by Saint Germain, nor did I ever approve of it. Saint Germain has never told us he was giving Dictations to Bob LeFevre. His promise given to us before at least four thousand Students at the Shrine Auditorium in December 1936 is the Authority which I obey and I shall never accept the word of any human being against the Word of the Ascended Master, whom I have obeyed for ten years and who has given this priceless Gift of Truth and Light thru our Beloved Messenger for the freedom of mankind. His Light and Instruction to mankind shall not be desecrated,—mis-represented, distorted or contaminated by any human being nor group of them. We shall tell the Truth at all times and that which is not the Purity, Truth and Perfection of the Ascended Masters, including our Beloved Messenger, Mr. Ballard, shall never have acceptance by us nor those who really serve the Light.

"This book is not to be sold or permitted within the Reading Rooms nor Sanctuaries of

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

this Ascended Master Instruction of the 'I AM' under Saint Germain. Any Group Leader or Student who reads or accepts it as coming from Saint Germain will have his or her card [417] taken up and be removed from This Work.

"Every student is on the spot and will reveal himself or herself thru his or her own decisions, and whether or not such persons remain in this Activity and are permitted a card to our classes remains with each one. We do not make the decisions, but each one reveals his or her motives and removes himself or herself. Every individual who is not a million percent loyal in his heart to this Light will sooner or later take himself or herself out. The Cosmic Light is revealing these things and as It continues to increase, none can longer hide their secret motives, whether known or unknown outwardly to the individual.

"* * * * *

"We call the Infinite Powers of Light into action to surround each 'I AM' Student with a Wall of Blue Flame and give him or her invincible protection against all nefarious activities and see that not one fails; but that each stands in, to, with and for his or her own 'Mighty I AM Presence' and go forth to Victory. May the Light within you be strong

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

enough to reveal to you the Truth, then see you obey Its Direction.

"* * * * *

"Lovingly in the Service of the Light

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD

"DONALD BALLARD

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD"

I received

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 194

through the mail on or about the date it bears. Thereupon Exhibit 194 was offered and received in evidence. Said Exhibit reads as follows:

"Biltmore Hotel

"Los Angeles, California

[418]

"Sept. 12, 1940

"Beloved Students of the Light:

"While the letter of Saint Germain's Council is going to you, I take this opportunity of sending you my personal Love and Blessings and presenting certain information which I know will delight all.

* * * * * * *

"Because of the heavy duties to be performed it has been impossible to get out the Group Leaders' Letters as was intended, but recently another means of reaching the students weekly has developed, which we feel will be

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

far more effective and release a Radiation and assistance that the letters could not do.

"I shall make a weekly Record, similar to the Transcriptions which will contain a thirty-minute talk, setting forth the important things each week and giving the student body a resume of what is required to meet the conditions of today. This Record will require a Play-back which we are now working out and expect to have ready within the next few weeks, and as soon as the students secure them I will begin making the Records and send them thru by express.

"The cost of the Play-back will be approximately $125.00 and the Records $3.00 each. These Play-backs may also be used to play the regular Victrola Records. The Play-back and Records may be retained by the Groups for their continued use and Blessing, but it is always understood they remain the property of the Group and not of some individual or Group Leader, and are not to be used except in Group Activities. This is true of everything purchased with money donated by the students for the Group Activities. Everything purchased by the Group remains the property of the Group and not the Group [419] Leader.

"* * * *

"A lot of new Decrees will soon be released

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

—perhaps 40 or 50 pages. Please keep this in mind and place your orders for same.

"We hope to have our Beloved Victory's Song, containing His Picture on the cover ready before the close of the Shrine Class. Orders may be placed for this also.

"* * * * *

"With the increasing demands upon our time, the extra work which has been necessary to combat vicious destructive forces and the great need for America's protection, it has been impossible to do more than has been done. I appreciate the patience and loyalty of the Student Body, and now want to show that appreciation by sending my voice into your midst every week.

"* * * * *

"Sincerely in the Service of the Light,

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD AND DONALD

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD & DONALD (Signed)"

I received Government's Exhibit 195, the mimeographed letter marked "copy" addressed to "My dear Mary Ketcham" through the mails on or about the date it bears, October 3, 1939. Thereupon said exhibit was offered and received in evidence as Government's Exhibit 195.

Thereupon three copies of "The Voice of the I

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

AM" for October, November and December of 1940 were offered and received in evidence without objection and marked Government's Exhibits 196, 197 and 198, respectively.

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 197, the November, 1940 issue of "The Voice", page 4 and page 18, et seq.

Thereupon, an I AM fundamental group instruction, [420] Book No. 2, Government's Exhibit 199 was identified by the witness and offered and received in evidence.

Cross Examination

I left the I AM activity on January 15, 1941. I turned over my records to the Post Office Department several months after that, in December, 1941. I delivered them to Mr. Van Meter. I brought them down here under subpoena. I don't think I had correspondence with Mr. Van Meter between the time I left the work and December of 1941 when I brought the papers here. Mr. Van Meter first contacted me concerning my appearing as a witness two or three months before December of 1941. I don't know when he contacted me. I did not communicate with him first. I have had evidence of the effect of this work upon myself when we were sending out love blessings and forgiveness to all mankind and were trying to live up to the I AM discourses where we shouldn't have a feeling of mild dislike to anyone and sending love to anyone who harmed us in any way, never to go to sleep at night

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler,)

until we had; and, of course, I had practiced that before I came into the activity and I received much blessing and forgiveness in coming in and practicing it. I did receive many manifestations of the blessing of this manifestation, of course, of sending out love and blessings, and I have received many lovely things since then. We also accepted radiations from other classes. We felt that it was a radiation that we received. It benefited us. Any radiation from love and blessing is a benefit.

I was a group leader in Seattle in 1937 and I recall when we tuned in on the class being held in Boston and we found that the greatest waves of joy and happiness swept over us, and in any other class, if we would all get still in the class and send out our love and blessing, that it would all come back.

Q. Now, you also received, did you not, certain inner instructions from the ascended masters themselves? [421]

A. Please explain that.

Q. I call your attention to this letter of November 15, 1939, the fourth paragraph thereof, written by you, and you say this:

> "In my last letter I sent you a clipping concerning the meteor that was seen here. At this very same time I was awakened from a sound sleep, my body vibrating from head to foot. I was conscious of some inner instruction with the masters. I awakened giving mighty decrees. This was a most joyous experience."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

By the inner instruction mentioned in the letter, I meant that great joy and exhileration. I found that in applying the law of love and blessing and throwing out love and blessing and forgiveness to everyone that I, not only myself but others, really received benefit from that part of the law that they set forth. I attributed that when I was with the movement to my call to my own Mighty I Am Presence and to Mr. Ballard and to Saint Germain. I called to them and to many, many of the ascended hosts, the angelic hosts, the cosmic being, the Gods and Godesses of the Universe. There is a law that when one does that, things theretofore unknown are revealed to you about things on the ordinary mundane plane. I found that while I was with the movement and you will find it in or out of the movement. I believed what Mr. Cassiere said concerning the radiations resulting from autographing the book. I don't put as much strength or as much blessing in it now as I did then. I find that the radiations from the Mighty I Am Presence, as they call it, or God Almighty come to us. We can bless our clothes and our own books. It isn't necessary for someone else to bless them for us. I believe even now that certain radiations come from autographing a book or by anyone's personal contact with me. I don't know that I have ever made the decision that Mr. Cassiere's statement [422] of 1936 was not true. I believed Mr. Stickell's statement concerning autographing the books. I don't

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

know whether or not I believe that statement true or false. I hadn't thought of it until you mentioned it. I don't think anyone's autograph in a book means very much. I don't believe now that it is as true as I thought at that time. I believed what Mr. Stickell said concerning Saint Germain preventing a war in Europe. When the war started I just pigeon-holed that idea. I didn't dare think of it because doubt is disintegrating. You don't dare to doubt. I didn't think about whether it was true or false. I pigeon-holed it. Mr. Ballard didn't say that it was his higher mental body that had eternity when he stated that he came out of a cave of light in India with the body of immortal endurance. He told me that it was the physical body that you saw right there. I believed the statement but came to the conclusion it was false when he passed on December 29, 1939. Thereafter I continued in the activity for a year and a month and conducted the reading room in Seattle and promulgated the teachings of the I Am. In the meantime, you know, Mr. Ballard has said many, many times from the platform that he and Mrs. Ballard would stay right here in this physical octave with the students until the ascended masters would step through and take over the Government of the United States of America and usher in the golden age, and, of course, that was something I didn't understand. I pigeon-holed that. That didn't look right and it was just paralyzing to know that Mr. Ballard had passed on when he was

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

going to stay with us and still I just hoped and hoped—I knew that the teachings and the I Am Discourses, the law of love and blessing, was all right, and maybe just something I didn't understand, and I was willing to wait to be enlightened on it.

I came to the conclusion in December 1939 that Mr. Ballard's statement about his being immortal was false, and perhaps [423] I didn't understand it as well as I might. It is a hard thing to think about, I will tell you; when you are seeing people that are immortal and not going to pass out, and see them go, naturally it was a shock to us. After December 29, 1939 and after I came to that conclusion, I persisted in the teaching of the I Am doctrines. You see, there was a new dispensation. I had come to the conclusion very definitely in December 1939 that he had made a false statement, but then they were the law and I possibly didn't understand the law. They would say in every class that they were the law. I was under the law and they were the law, so of course I didn't understand. They said in every class that it was through them that these things were going to be accomplished. They also told us that we had to work it out ourselves. We had to apply the law and they would assist us in applying the law.

Mr. Ballard did not dismiss Catherine Rogers the night that Mrs. Ballard said she was going to ask him to. As far as I know she was dismissed in July

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

of 1939. Mrs. Ballard said that she would not go on the stage with Catherine Rogers in Chicago, but I know that she went on the entire tour with the Ballards from Seattle clear across the country, including Chicago. She didn't mention that she would dismiss her, but that she would have "Daddy" do so. I believed the statement made by Mrs. Ballard that if Saint Germain would dismiss Catherine Rogers and release his radiation from her, she would never be able to sing another note as long as she lived. I heard Catherine Rogers dismissed by Saint Germain in the Shrine class of 1939. I never heard her sing after that until recently—since I have been down here. I went to a service with her where she sang. I would not say that I have been visiting with her since coming here.

In December 1940 I wrote the following to Mrs. Ballard: [424]

> "I love the light more than anything else and I will always be an I Am Student, whether I am recognized or not. I know that love and love alone and enough love, can lift me into the Perfection I once knew."

An I Am student isn't a Ballard student. I had never heard of the movement before I had heard of the Ballards but I have read much on the I Am. I don't know whether I meant the Ballards' I Am movement when I used the "I Am Movement" in the letter or not. I mean that I am an I Am student. I still am. So are you. I remember the instruction

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

contained in Government's Exhibit 187, on page 11:

> "Do not try to take this ascended master instruction into your old teachings to bolster up any old activity. It draws terrific reactions. Do not try to be a group leader and straddle the fence. Be honest, and if your experiences are not proof enough to you, go your way with your blessings and forget it."

I followed that instruction to the best of my ability. I don't know that my failure to follow the instructions was one of the reasons I was dismissed. I was dismissed because the groups were disintegrating. I asked for a letter and said that I would give up the activity if Mrs. Ballard would so state. She said the groups were disintegrating in Seattle and they should be growing. I knew that to be a fact. After we closed the groups many people wouldn't sign a card to come in that would have come in before, and when we had to stand at the door and look people over from head to foot to see if they had any shade of red such as wine, or henna or maroon or black, they didn't like it. They couldn't come in if they had any of those. We had a morgue outside where the men took off their ties and their shoes. We tried everything to get them to take off their shoes and there was such confusion [425] and the people would get so mad if they couldn't wear the colors they wanted to. Many people were working in stores where they had to wear black and they

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

didn't have time to go home to change their clothes before coming to the meeting and they couldn't come to the meeting with their black clothes. That was after the classes were closed, after Mr. Ballard passed on in 1939. I can't say what month. They told us to close the classes and we had to close the classes and interview everyone. It was up to me to judge whether or not they were sincere enough to give them a card. What I meant by closing the classes was that prior to the time we closed them in 1940 anyone could come to a study group meeting that wanted to come. After Mr. Ballard passed on, I had to interview everyone personally to determine whether I felt they were sincere or not. Then I could issue them a card and they had to show this card at the door. Many people who attended the group meetings before wouldn't sign. They didn't want to join anything, because they said, "We have been told organization is limitation. This will never, never be organized." So when it came to signing up—people had to sign a card to come in—and you had to talk to them to find out if they were sincere, if they had a set of books, you know, just interview them. That caused a lot of trouble and many people, and lovely people, refused to come. I was in favor of that. I tried to the best of my ability to follow the instruction contained in Government's Exhibit 187, that "at no time should anyone ever attempt to explain or elaborate upon the teachings in the Saint Germain

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

series or the Voice of the I Am." I wrote the letter of November 17, 1938 to the Ballards and received the reply dated December 2, 1938 from the Ballards, which letters are marked

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT HH

for identification. Mr. Cannon thereupon read portions of the letter of November 17, 1938, a part of the portions read being as follows: [426]

"When I saw Mr. Stickell in Tacoma, I invited him to Seattle; and I hope the Mighty I Am Presence, and Saint Germain will see fit to let him come here some time in the future."

"For some time now, I have had the urge to bring up the sex activity in the closed class; for I am certainly convinced the last enemy to be destroyed IS sex. So, last Thursday night, I took off my gloves, and I brought out the necessity of conserving the sex energy. And, oh boy, did I stir up a hornet's nest. I found out, to my surprise that one of our dearest girls had secretly married, a few weeks ago,—saying she 'knew what she was doing.' While I did not know of her marriage, I had noticed a change in her expression, that puzzled me. Anyway, she took offense, thinking I was spanking her, when I didn't know of her marriage, at the time, at all. I did not discuss marriage,—nothing either for nor against, I

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

simply reminded them of the law concerning the conserving of the sex energy.

"Three days later, Miss Thompson, the leader of the Young People's Group, came and put me on the spot, telling me what 'her' youngsters had discussed with her, and she agreed with them. I told her, I only gave the law. The following is what she said to me. Of course, it is what the youngsters have expressed to her; but again I repeat,—she agrees with them:

Mr. Ballard says it is O.K. to get married.

"It is all right to marry because Don and Marjorie are married.

"They feel they can do better work together if married, than apart. [427]

"Each has certain qualities predominating that the other needs for inspiration. (Twin Ray)

"The goal of all youth is to marry and have a home of their own.

"They don't want to live with their parents all their lives.

"It is O. K. to marry an I Am student and have babies.

"It is O. K. to marry if you have separate bedrooms.

"What about the propagation of the race?

"I feel the youth have been encouraged to look to companionship and marriage first of all, instead of to the Ascension.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"Miss Thompson said to me: 'You can't take everything away from youth, and everything else has been taken away. Why take this?'

"I was truly shocked, not knowing at the time I brought up the subject, just why I did it, except that I had such an urge to do so.

"Miss Thompson is really a darling,—a wonderful student, the youngsters love her and this is a vital question for her to call to the Presence to handle.

"As I said before, I did not advise anyone to marry or not to marry,—I only stated the law. The youngsters and Miss Thompson both think separate bedrooms solve the whole problem. She told me only word from you Messengers will satisfy them on this subject. So, my Dear One, in one of your many (?) spare moments,—please answer me, won't you?

"One girl in the Youth's Group,—Ruth Welch, who is sixteen years old, wanted her freedom, so she left home last spring, and she hitch hiked from here down thru Arizona, Nevada, back to New York and down to Florida. She had only a few cents and of course, she associated with the most questionable characters. At last she wrote her parents, and they sent her a ticket to come home. She is back now, in the group again. She resents and will [428] not accept discipline in her home."

Thereupon, the letter of December 2, 1938, which is a part of

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT HH

for identification was offered and admitted in evidence. Said letter reads as follows:

'December 2, 1938

"Mrs. D. D. Fowler
"613 Orpheum Bldg.,
"Seattle, Washington.

"Blessed One,

"So glad to hear all the good news about Seattle.

"With regard to any imaginary trip to Seattle on our part we enclose herewith a schedule of coming classes from which you can easily see it will be impossible to visit Seattle until after next July at the earliest, much though we love you precious ones and long to do everything possible for your blessing and protection.

"We have very carefully gone over your comment regarding marriage and what was said about it by Miss Thompson the leader of the young people's Group, in which you quoted some specific statements regarding marriage with the explanation that Miss Thompson agrees with these statements. Unfortunately the remarks are such that our comment must be that we also agree with them, with some minor reservations and qualifications as follows:

"It most assuredly is 'O.K. to get married'

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

provided the individuals are sincere, understand the Law and feel directed by their 'Mighty I Am Presence' to do so. There is nothing in this Law forbidding marriage. The 'Mighty I Am Presence' of each individual is the Directing Intelligence of their life and we cannot be concerned about the activities of individuals with regard to such [429] matters. Remember the carrots and radishes."

(Mr. Cannon states: "I digress to read from the 'Ascended Master Light,' which is

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 8,

page 394, et seq.)

"Oh let us not yield any longer to discordant things of any kind! Remember that within all Life, everything is loving, kindly co-operation. In all life, in all Nature, does the apple tree interfere with the oak? Does the cherry tree interfere with the peach? Is there not a magnificent Law of selection? Does the tomato interfere with the potato? Does the radish interfere with the carrot? Then, the Selective Law, now mark you this is tremendous, if you get the point! the Selective Intelligence which is acting throughout Nature is what is ordinarily termed a mass consciousness. While it is directed largely by the Maha Chohan, yet it acts with definite precision. Why? Because

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

the carrot does not interefere with the radish. It does not try to. You know you are far more important than the radish, and the carrot.

"Notice, we are getting down to brass tacks, as you say. Now notice! These are powerful things, dear ones, and once you get this in the feeling consciousness, you will never let go of it in the world.

"That which is acting as a mass throughout Nature, is far less powerful than the Intelligence of your Presence acting through you, is it not? Is there any comparison? Then, why do you not have the same result that the carrot and the radish do? Because you are constantly interfering with each other. Do you not see that? Your human desire to dictate to another person and tell him what to do, when and how to do it, is the thing that plays the havoc in the human [430] world. If you could be like the carrot and the radish not wanting to interfere with each other, think! how wonderful your Life would be—filled with beauty, harmony and perfection."

Continuing with the letter from Exhibit HH.

"It is foolish to refer to the marriage of Don and Marjorie as having any bearing on the subject. Each individual represents a case all by itself and because it might be right or wrong for one couple to be married would have

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

no bearing on the marriage of any other couple.

"There are some who indeed can do better work together if married than apart. There are others whose value as a channel of service to the Light might be impaired by marriage because it might take too much of their attention from their service to the Light.

"No one should allow any consideration of 'Twin Rays' to effect their decision regarding marriage unless they had the direct assurance of an Ascended Master that the individual involved were indeed Twin Rays.

"It would certainly be a mistake to feel 'that the goal of all youth is to marry and have a home of their own.' Each individual must be be free to set up their own goal. Those who are sincere students will no doubt consider the Ascension as being the supreme goal.

"It is quite understandable that young people should desire to not live with their parents all their lives. Many times it is impossible for them to express their own 'Mighty I Am Presence' in action until separation from home conditions is achieved.

"It most certainly is 'O. K. to marry an 'I Am' student [431] and have babies.'

"There is no Law in this work against the propagation of the race. The Law regarding the conservation of sex energy is that it shall not be wasted. The use of it for the purpose

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

of furnishing the means of physical embodiment to one who needs such embodiment is most certainly not a waste.

"Provided other conditions are right it is O. K. to marry if you have separate bed-rooms or if you don't. Remember there is no prohibition of marriage in this teaching.

"As you can readily see it has been necessary for us in compliance to the Law of this Work to seem to be more definitely in agreement with Miss Thompson than otherwise, because the statements made were definite statements and the point wherein Miss Thompson may be in error may be rather a matter of attitude than statement. One who might have the wrong attitude or feeling about this situation might easily interpret the above statement of the Law as encouraging young people to get married. Such would indeed be a mistake, for the danger with young people is that they are living in a world where the human qualification of many ideas, situations and feelings is indeed charged with the feeling that sexual relationship is the logical, primary objective of life. Because of this mass qualification it is necessary that they be constantly on guard to see that human qualification does not drive them into marriage. It is often difficult for young people to distinguish between Divine Love and sexual attraction and it is very easy for them to allow

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

their human intellect to build up a case in favor of an action which [432] is actually the direct result of human physical sex attraction. It is clear indeed that a marriage which is the result of sex attraction would no doubt in the very great majority of cases result only in disaster so far as the expansion in the Light of the individuals involved is concerned. We would most certainly discourage rather than encourage young people to think of marriage, for a marriage which would be in accord with the Law of this Work is a marriage which would be the result of long and serious consideration on the part of those involved and persistent dynamic application to be directed, each one by their own 'Mighty I Am Presence' to do the perfect thing, coupled with a determined refusal to allow human desires, emotions or suggestions to intrude and a basic determination to do only that which is most definitely in the Service of the Light. How different this is from the ordinary concept of marriage in which it is assumed to be the logical out-come of 'mutual' (sexual) attraction.

"Needless to say we have repeatedly warned the students and especially the young people against hitch-hiking. Nothing could be more vicious or destructive in its effect upon them. Any young person 16 years old should most certainly be fully obedient and under the close

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

supervision and discipline of their parents, unless it might be that the parents were actually vicious and attempting to force the young person into a violation of the Law of Life which would interfere with the compliance on the part of the child to this Law.

"We feel it would be going too far for a Group Leader to be concerned about the personal affairs of the [433] students to the extent of refusing them membership in a 100% Group because of their attendance at food lectures. No doubt many thousands of students do many things which are very silly and foolish, but ordinarily membership in a 100% Group would only be withheld on the basis of a serious violation of the Laws of this Work.

"You don't know how happy it makes us to hear of the wonderful expansion of the Light in Seattle and of the fine response you precious ones are calling forth in the Minute Men's and your other Group activities. We constantly send forth to you Limitless Protection and Ascended Master Help in your Service of the Light.

"Our Love and Blessings enfold you always."

After I received that letter (the letter of December 2 from the Ballards), I did not still persist in talking about this sex business. I cut it out. I went back to the Ballards about it. I wrote the letter of August 20, 1939, which is a part of De-

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

fendants' II for identification. I received a reply to that letter, dated September 28, 1939. Thereupon, the letter of August 20, 1939 was offered and received in evidence, marked

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT II.

"613 Orpheum Bldg.
"Seattle, Washington
"August 20, 1939

"Precious Messenger of the Light:

* * * * *

"Now for this next,—I had hoped, when I wrote you before on this particular subject of marriage, I would never have to mention it again; but since I returned from the Shrine Class, this matter has arisen again. [434]

"Mary Helen Briggs, one of the members of the Youth's Groups, and the one who started the agitation before, has secured a license to marry one of the boys in the Group. She is really a very lovely girl,—not vicious, but she has always had 'boys in her bonnet.' She is so desirous of having a husband and home, but the young man lives with his parents and is wholly dependent upon them for his living.

"Miss Eleanore Thompson, the Group Leader of the Young People, came to me regarding this. I think so much of Tommy, as we all call her, I hesitate to say anything that might seem

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

critical. I have never known anyone who has such wonderful discipline with the youngsters, and who, at the same time, always keeps their good will. Nevertheless, Tommy came to me telling me the young people had talked to her, telling her they had taken up the marriage proposition with their Presence, just as Pearl had told them to do, and they felt they were doing the right thing in getting married.

"I asked Tommy, if they had really taken the matter up with their Presence, why they came to her for advice, after they were so sure they had received the okeh from the Presence.

"In talking to me, Tommy said she felt the human could not judge, that in the Golden Age we would all have homes, and she told them she thot it was all right for GOOD 100% Students to get married, if they had the right thot.

"Mary Helen has been the only 'sore thumb' in the group; and from time to time, has had to be disciplined for disobedience. If she really goes ahead now and [435] gets married, this will be the first marriage among students in our Youth Group, and what I want to know is,—have I the authority to ask her and her husband,—if such he becomes, to stop attending the Young People's Group, and to just come to the regular Group Meetings, which they both attend, in addition to attending the Youth's Group. Another thing, too, the young man is not

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

only wholly dependent upon his parents for support, but his parents are both violently opposed to the I AM, and they have even threatened the Fowlers with a shotgun. And we, of course, are not responsible for their son's desire to marry.

"I told Tommy I would no more encourage anyone to get married than I would cut off my right arm,—that I would encourage them only to cut themselves free from all human creation and limitation and to attain their Freedom in the Light; and that I felt it was a very serious matter for a Group Leader to encourage anyone to marry. As Tommy is now attending the Oakland Class, I am just wondering if you feel like bringing up the subject of Group Leaders encouraging marriage.

"And I shall appreciate your letting me know at your very earliest convenience, just what I should do regarding letting Mary Helen and the young man attend the Youth's Group,—should they go ahead and use the marriage license they have secured. It doesn't seem to me it would be setting a very good example for the others, especially in view of Mary Helen's having been, from time to time, a disturbing element within the group. It was both Mary Helen and Tommy who confronted me before, with the statement that we in the I AM, are taking everything away from the young people, when it [436] is

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

'natural' for them to marry and have homes and families.

"I shall await word from you, before I say anything, because I am calling my Presence into action, to keep me from making any mistakes in this matter. I do feel I need your advice.

"The atmosphere has certainly cleared since the receiving of those wonderful copies of letters; and the Students here are looking forward with great eagerness to Brother Bill's coming. We have arranged to take the Moore Theatre, from October 6 to 15 inclusive.

"The Seattle Students join with me in sending all our Love to you, to Mr. Ballard, your staff and all whose privilege it is to attend the Oakland Class. While we are not there in person,—we are all WITH you,—always.

"Ever in the Service of the Light,

"D. D. FOWLER".

Mr. Ballard said that when he and Mrs. Ballard came into this light they were "hitched," that is the expression he used, and they didn't advise people to get married. I can't answer "yes" or "no" whether or not I thought it was inconsistent with what she had said before. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2667.) Thereupon the reply to Defendants' Exhibit II was read in part by counsel for defendants, as follows: (N. B. Part of KK for Identification).

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"In comment regarding your explanation of the situation regarding Mary Helen Briggs and Eleanor Thompson, we can only point out that each individual is the decreer of their own life, each one is a Being of Free Will, each one Must be given the privilege of doing what they want to do—the privilege even of making all the mistakes they want to make (with the [437] understanding of course that this does not include the violation of rules and regulations for the conduct of Group activities, etc.).

"The Ascended Ones have never said that 'good 100% students' should not get married. They have never given the slightest indication that married people or newly married people should not be permitted to attend the Young People's Groups provided there is no other reason for their not being permitted to attend.

"We agree with you, of course, that it certainly would not be carrying out the Law of this Work for any 'I AM' Group Leader to 'encourage marriage,' for so often the desire to marry is prompted by human desires rather than any urge from the 'Mighty I AM Presence' of the individual, yet the full truth is that no sincere Group Leader who is fully living out the Law of this Work, will be concerned at all about whether any certain students do or do not marry. Serapis Bey was talking just as directly to Group Leaders as to other students

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

when he spoke about the carrot and the radish. We cannot imagine how any carrot could be concerned about whether or not a radish married.

"Any Group Leader who allows themself to become involved in such matters with a student is placing themselves in the gravest danger, of undertaking to direct or suggest what the other individual should do. This is something which we never permit ourselves to do because we appreciate so fully how great a violation of the Law it would be.

"When any student or Group Leader comes to us with such 'problems' we meticulously avoid saying [438] anything which could be construed as advising them in any way. If there is a question of the Law which they do not understand we explain the Law, but we cannot allow ourselves to be concerned as to whether they are obedient to the Law or not. Our attention is constantly being called to cases where Group Leaders and others are flagrantly violating the Law of Life in their own lives, yet we cannot allow ourselves to be concerned for one moment. Any Group Leader who does not rigidly conform to this same attitude of unconcern about the obedience of others in their private lives would certainly be setting up the cause for much difficulty and distress in the future."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Prior to the receipt of Government's Exhibit 189 (letter dated October 8, 1940 from Mrs. Ballard), Mrs. Ballard had written to me or talked about not engaging or letting people engage in gossip or acrimonious discussion in the classes. There was no discussion in the classes. Mrs. Ballard had asked me to keep things harmonious as far as humanly possible in the group meetings. I received the letter of October 8, 1940 introduced in evidence, wherein reference is made "That no time be lost in idle conversation or gossip." I received the original of the letter dated May 10, 1940. Whereupon said letter was admitted in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT JJ.

Said letter reads as follows:

"May 10, 1940

"Mrs. D. D. Fowler
"'I AM' Reading Room
"913 N. Orpheum Bldg.
"Seattle, Wash.

"Blessed One of the Light:

"I promised to write you and expected to have a letter waiting when you returned, but these have been [439] busy days, and only now have I found time to be quiet long enough to write a letter.

"After talking to you at the Shrine Class I have had several telegrams and letters asking that I do something regarding conditions in

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Seattle and give them a Group Leader who will issue the Decrees and not express their own opinions and keep talking and saying things which would be better left unsaid.

"Now my dear I know from experience how these things can start and get to revolving among disgruntled individuals, but I feel a sincerity in these letters and wires which 'I dare' not overlook or ignore. I am also aware that in every place where Group Leaders have not followed the Outline and have resorted to personal talking and discussions, they have all had difficulty, for personalities have crept in without their realizing it.

"The Group Meetings are for the purpose of going thru the Outlines as given and no discussion other than the necessary announcements pertaining to the work. This has not been followed in the past year I find, and much discord has driven in because of the lack of obedience to the Divine Director's request.

"As I stated in the Shrine Class we are revising the Outlines and all Groups in the future must stay with these Outlines and build the pattern at the Inner Level which the Divine Director can use for certain protection of America. I shall expect all Groups to do this, and please do not give voice to any more personal opinions, etc. If something is wrong, apply the Law and clear it out thru your calls,

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

but do not harass the Students. This must not be done. [440]

"Many of the Students are carrying heavy burdens and they need kindness and a helping hand, and more of this must be expressed as the Cosmic Light increases, or disaster will ensue.

"I know you, Mr. Fowler and your daughter, will heed this prompting. I am conscious of the viciousness directed toward you, but you cannot meet that with anything but application of the Law. Most of that comes from without your midst and you need every one of those Soldiers of the Light to build a strong defense.

"Do not try to find out who sent the wires and letters, for I know their motive was right. The Students want peace and the out-picturing of the Perfection which should and could be.

"Accept my deepest Love and Blessings and know I send you the greatest protection I know how, and appreciate what you have done, but I dare not let such conditions grow, for with the expanding Cosmic Light it is dangerous; hence I write at length and give the prompting.

"May the Limitless Light and Love from out the Heart of Infinity flood your beings and worlds and give you Peace, Freedom and an Abundance of every good thing.

"Sincerely in the Light

"MRS. G. W. BALLARD

"....."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

The copy of the letter shown to me, addressed to Mr. D. D. Fowler, dated May 24, is not mine. There is no Mr. D. D. Fowler. I did not get that letter. I have read it but it wasn't to me. I read it a few days after it was received. It was intended for Mr. Fowler, but they had the wrong initials for him. My personal office was at 613 Orpheum Building on May 24, 1940. [441] Mr. Fowler had no office there. The letter came to him at that address. We received mail there. Thereupon said letter was marked Defendants' KK for identification. (N. B. Second part of KK)

I wrote and transmitted Defendants' Exhibit LL to the Ballards. Thereupon said exhibit was admitted in evidence. (N. B. It was P. S. to Exhibit MM, dated June 28, 1939.) It reads as follows:

> "I remember telling you the students are afraid to come to me with any gossip. I stay away from them not inviting any gossip or human opinions or suggestions. However one of our most devoted students (To the Light) said to me yesterday quote 'I am so *greatful* & it was so wonderful the Goddess of Light mentioned you in the Oakland Class, as it seemed to settle some of the agitators, who are either looking for sympathy or for trouble.' I asked who are they? (quote) She hesitated a moment & then said the Loyds & some others—you recall Mr. Loyd the former group leader for the Minute Men & his wife Mrs. Loyd. Frank Van-

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

derhouer will remember the lady at the information table here at the Music Hall theatre was Mrs. Loyd. She was a 'Problem Chile' he will recall—God Bless you & 'The Goddess of Light' forever. I always find help & protection come at the right time.

"Also that the more determined we get—The greater the determination of the Sinister activity to test our determination.

"Thanks a million—

"D.D.F."

Thereupon,

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT MM

was admitted in evidence. It reads as follows:

"613 Orpheum Building [442]

"Seattle, Washington

"June 28, 1939

"Blessed Ones:

"I want to take this opportunity of thanking Saint Germain and you for sending Paul Stickell to us. His loyalty to Saint Germain, to you and to the Activity has been an inspiration to us all.

"I am attending the Shrine Class. Wanted to arrive a few days ahead of time, but due to the sinister force trying to disturb the students, before, during and after the Paul Stickell Class here, I am staying here until the last minute.

"Mae Kovac, a former Christian Science

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

practitioner, and about whom I have written you before, placed the Paul Stickell announcements in one of the bus stations here, with the Christian Science literature; and this started the whole disturbance. One especially vicious practitioner passed on last week.

"The Adams group, of not more than a dozen people, had about folded up; until Mrs. Kovac went to them, had their announcements printed, and is now placing them at the bus station, where she had formerly put the Paul Stickell announcements, and also the announcements of our group meetings. We had another complaint about this,—this week. Mrs. Kovac is going around, contacting new students,—pulling them, or trying to, over to the Adams group, telling them Mr. Rogers wants more groups. She has told around that the sinister force has charge of me, and that therefore she is 'treating' me.

"We are decreeing for your return to Seattle, and I would like to talk to you while I am in Los Angeles, [443] about making arrangements for the Moore Theatre when you come, new developments concerning the radio, etc.

"Thanking you for all you have done for us, and all you have meant to us, and looking forward to seeing you at the Shrine,—I send you

"All Love and Blessings,

D. D. FOWLER."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

I still had confidence in Mr. Stickell on the date of that letter, June 28, 1939. Thereupon it was stipulated that the witness wrote the letter,

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT NN,

and the same was thereupon admitted in evidence. It reads as follows:

"613 Orpheum Building
"Seattle, Washington
"March 26, 1940

"Precious Mama:

"* * * * * * *

"During the past few weeks, while giving this decree and visualizing our perfect Temple of Ljght for Seattle, I would experience a feeling of nausea. Because of this, I omitted the decree, a number of times. Finally, I 'riz rite up,' calling to the Presence, Daddy and Saint Germain, to reveal to me any wrong activities, the obstruction and the source of the projections. I asked to be shown the perfect thing, and to be made to do it perfectly.

"Within four days, all was revealed to me. A Mrs. Gladys Murray from Los Angeles. (a highly emotional character) who has been in Seattle over a year, started entertaining the students in her home, telling them that in Los Angeles they had time for decrees And social activities. Until the 'revealing' time came. I

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

was absolutely unaware of her activities along the [444] social line.

"All went well, until Mrs. Murray invited Walter and Beatrice Loyd to her home. Mr. Loyd is the former leader of the Seattle Minute Men's Group, whom Mr. Fowler replaced. When he was replaced, Mr. Loyd contacted some of our students, saying he was not 'through'. At that time, he couldn't find any students to listen to him, so he started a correspondence with Harry Rogers. While he was and is vicious, I found in that family, the female of the species is more deadly than the male! Thinking that by pouring out love to them, they would eventually reform, I allowed them to come to the group meetings. While they attended the meetings, they wouldn't speak when they met me, and during the meetings Mr. Loyd, who boasts of his mental power, would sit in the audience, trying to 'stare me down.'

"This social activity, or rather contact with the Loyds, turned Mrs. Murray, and three others against me. They were all members of my 100% Group.

"They started a whispering campaign among the students that the decree for a Temple was used as a camouflage to obtain money from the students, so we could buy a home of our own. They are decreeing to replace me with themselves as head of the *Acitivty* here.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"I gave out from the platform, what had been going on, without mentioning or even hinting names, telling the guilty ones to stay away until they had cleaned house thoroughly.

"Mark Wheaton, the man whom I replaced at the door, because of arrogance and his insistence in handing around books on psychology, etc., to the students in the auditorium and reading room, is also in this mixup. His [445] employer informed me last night, there is a vicious plot afoot, against me as head of this Focus of Light.

"The loyal helpers, who know more what is going on than I do, have arranged among themselves to take us home after the group meetings, instead of letting us stand on the corner, waiting for a streetcar. While I feel no fear of bodily harm, I do feel their 'plot' will be to write or contact you. Mrs. Murray has friends in Ratana's Group.

"Regardless of all this, I remain dauntless and 100% loyal to the books of the Saint Germain Series and the VOICE OF THE 'I AM', and I continue to refuse to allow other books or magazines to be brought into the reading room or auditorium or even discussed there.

"CHURCH OF THE ASCENDED MASTERS"

"Spiritualists here have organized a church by the above name, and they are giving out now

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

they are getting messages from Mr. Ballard, asking them to pray for him, because he gave out the wrong teaching while he was here in physical embodiment.

* * * * * * *

"By writing all this to you,—please know, Precious Mama, I am not doing so to add one feather's weight to your great responsibility, but I feel you should know a little something of what is going on here. We are depending wholly on the Mighty I Am Presence, Daddy and Saint Germain for our direction and protection. Regardless of the few agitators, we have many loyal students here in Seattle.

"I don't know of anyone who is enjoying this Shrine Class any more than Mr. Fowler, and I do hope he will be able to see you personally, for he has something for [446] you.

"The momentum has been gained in the giving of our decrees, and the Light is certainly doing its PERFECT WORK, CLAIMING ITS OWN, and TAKING ITS TOLL.

"With all Love and Blessings to you, Donald, Marjorie and the Staff, I am,

"Ever in the Service of the Light,

"D. D. FOWLER."

I met Dr. Bressler from Washington, D. C. in Los Angeles. I don't know whether it was September or not nor whether a Shrine class was going on at the time. I didn't tell him that I was going to see

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

the Post Office Inspectors. I don't know whether it was September or October when I was in Los Angeles. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2692.)

My references to my statement in Exhibit NN, "While he was and is vicious, I found in that family, the female of the species is more deadly than the male" referred to the Loyd family. I wrote the letter dated April 8, 1940, which is

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT OO

Thereupon said exhibit was admitted in evidence. It reads as follows:

"613 Orpheum Building
"Seattle, Washington
"April 8, 1940

"Precious Messenger:

"Mr. Fowler has just returned from the Shrine Class, and he is so enthusiastic, he is encouraging all the Seattle Students to attend the next Shrine Class.

"As a Guardian of the Light, and not a tattler, I feel that you should know that Mr. Rohrbach, 'head group leader of Tacoma' as he terms it, and a German, smokes cigarettes. I met him on the street one days and spoke to him, and he was smoking. He was on the same train [447] with Mr. Fowler, going down to the Shrine Class, and at one station where everyone got off for an airing, Mr. Fowler and another Student saw him smoking.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"Mrs. Nevers, who has charge of the Daughters of Light in Tacoma, has always been a questioning, disturbing nuisance in our Reading Room and in our Group Activities here, when she has been in town. She makes remarks out loud during the meetings, so those around her can hear her. This I would not allow any Seattle student to do, and I have put up with Mrs. Nevers ever since I first opened the Reading Room.

"From now on, I will bar both Mr. Rohrbach and Mrs. Nevers from all Seattle Group Activities. They are both personal friends of Walter and Beatrice Loyd, about whom I have written you before.

"Mrs. Gladys Murray, the highly emotional individual about whom I wrote you, who opened her home as a rendezvous to disgruntled 'students', is a personal friend and correspondent of Elma Quigley, a lovely Los Angeles Student, who attends Ratana's Group. Also, she is a friend of Louise Billings, who traveled with you. Thru these sincere, unsuspecting Students, Mrs. Murray expects to get into the next Shrine Class.

"Some of the '100% students' while still in my group activities, were busy investigating your financial status, and then they went around, criticising you to the other students here, telling them how You should spend your

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

money! And now, these people are 'truly grateful for the steps that have led them up to the I Am,' but they have found something beyond. I made no mistake in dismissing these people from the group.

"Regardless of what anyone says about you, or [448] about me, I am fearless, I am dauntless, I am determined to hold this Focus of Light, in the Light, untouched by all human opinions.

"I am not complaining nor asking for help, but I am outlining just briefly, some of the things that have been going on up here.

* * * * * * *

"Most of the Students here are just wonderful and are standing firm. As I tell them, Saint Germain cannot use any 'wobblies' in his Army of Light.

"God Bless You,—We Love you, forever, Forever, and FOREVER.

"D. D. FOWLER."

Q. Now, Mrs. Fowler, after having heard those letters read, do you still say that you complied with Mrs. Ballard's instructions about not gossiping?

A. Mrs. Ballard told me that she wanted me to keep in touch with her: if there was anything that I couldn't settle, to keep her in touch with the student activity. I wrote to Mrs. Ballard because she told me the last time I ever saw her. She said, "Go back and clean up on them. You are not half tough

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

enough. I proceeded to get tough, but it doesn't work. I don't like the reaction. She told me to do that at the four-day class in Los Angeles in 1940. Nothing she said during that conversation caused me to doubt her sincerity. She told me to go back and clean up on them and not to stand bringing different books in trying to confuse the students. I didn't feel that I was gossiping. The word gossip covers a multitude of sins.

Money was asked for in a way at the meetings. The announcer would usually mention the love gift boxes and that we should give according to our heart's desire and according to the money that we felt that we could give. [449]

Mr. Cannon then read the following from

EXHIBIT 186,

at pages 2 and 3, (This was from Instructions to Group Leaders dated January 3, 1939):

"Finances

"Never under any circumstances is any fee to be charged for anything done as a part of the 'I Am' Activity. Never at any time are any money schemes to be used for the support of any Group Activity. Implicit reliance upon the 'Mighty I Am Presence' as the storehouse of the Universe, and the issuing of mighty decrees for financial supply, will in every case release into the hands and use of the Group Leader all that is required to carry forth the Work with

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Ascended Master Perfection. Each Group Leader must learn to look to their own 'Mighty I Am Presence' as the only source of supply and never to the students nor to any human channel. To do the latter would inevitably shut off the supply. Under no circumstances may any request be made for money. Love Gift boxes may be placed where it is convenient for the students to use them, but never should a COLLECTION be taken for any purpose.

"Envelopes marked 'I Am Love Gift' may be provided but never should envelopes be marked applying to any particular fund. Of course individual students may mark their gifts for some particular fund if they wish, but for the envelopes to be so marked when given to the students, would constitute a solicitation for that particular fund. For the same reason it is not permissible for letters to be sent out to the students, solicitating donations for any purpose. The 'Mighty I Am Presence' is the only source of supply and as the students keep their attention on the Presence as the source, [450] and make their mighty decrees for limitless financial supply, everything will be taken care of with Ascended Master Perfection.

"Each Group Leader must individually take full responsibility for the financial affairs of their Group, and, in cases where the meeting room is provided by a Reading Room or Sanctu-

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

ary, we urge them to bear in mind their responsibility to the one furnishing the meeting room, that they do not fail to fulfill their obligation for the financial supply of the source which made the room available.

"The Group Leader is the sole authority regarding the handling of Love Gifts received by the Group and cannot be held responsible to any other individual or committee or required to submit any report or accounting of receipts and disbursements.

"As the students enter for the activity of the Group meeting the entire atmosphere must be one of courtesy and a dignified Radiation of Divine Love. No one should be admitted who has the odor of liquor on their breath nor anyone who is antagonistic or critical toward the Work. There are other ways for such people to become acquainted with the Work and the Teachings if they desire. Their presence in Group meetings should not be tolerated. The Group Leader is the final authority on such matters and, so far as their authority is concerned, need not even give a reason for excluding any individual or for removing them from the Group meeting at any time. Do not hesitate to use physical force if necessary and if there are not present, students who can give any needed assistance, do not hesitate to call for an officer of the law to have objectionable people [451] removed."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

I never had to report to any group or to any person as to love gifts. I never submitted any account or report to Mrs. Ballard. I followed the instruction to the effect that the entire atmosphere at the group activity must be one of courtesy and a dignified radiation of divine love and that antagonistic or critical persons might be removed or persons having an odor of liquor on their breath could be removed and that physical force could be used if necessary, or that an officer of the law could be called to have such persons removed, (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2707), but it was hard to tell who were critical, vicious or had liquor on their breath. Whenever one of these cases would come up, we had to come to some decision, and it was hard to be the sole authority because if you kept them in somebody would write to Mrs. Ballard and if you put them out somebody would write to Mrs. Ballard, so we got it coming and going.

I struggled along under these circumstances from 1936 to 1941, and I will struggle on for the protection of America, to save America.

Mrs. Ballard made the statement in 1938 concerning precipitation, that she had precipitated jewels of light in her own hands. The jewels of light mentioned in the paragraph of Exhibit NN, to wit, "Since the Shrine class I have the students visualize the jewels of light" were not the same kind. The jewels of light that we were taught—we were taught to visualize the jewels of light on the forehead and

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

on the solar plexus, but the jewels she precipitated were in her hands. She said that if she were on a desert island and she only had a glass of water and a toothpick, she could precipitate anything she needed or wanted. She didn't say air or water, only the glass of water. I didn't take it that she meant that she would precipitate it through natural channels. Sometimes they told us precipitation [452] would occur through natural channels. In the particular instance above, she didn't tell me how it would be precipitated.

Q. As a matter of fact you have had a precipitated breakfast, too, haven't you? A. (Pause)

Q. Have you?

A. Well, I had breakfast with the Ballards and that was the nearest precipitated breakfast I ever had.

Q. You referred to it in your writings, didn't you?

A. It was precipitated because it was from them. Saint Germain was supposed to be there but I didn't see him. I do not recall, I might have written to the Ballards that Saint Germain was there, but I have never seen Saint Germain. I would have to have permission from the Ballards to see him. I read "The Voice" during this period. Thereupon Mr. Cannon read from "The Voice," September, 1940 issue, as follows:

"Beloved friends and students, if you will only accept that your Presence is the Giver,

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

the Life and Intelligence to you, you will know It is your Treasure house. When you make the call for the supply you require, your 'I Am Presence' probably will not release to you coined money; but Its Love, Wisdom and Power go into action in the human octave and bring the conditions through natural human channels that will bring about the release of the money to you.'

Also, from April, 1940 issue of "The Voice," page 36, as follows:

"Since our Beloved Messenger came and gave this Light from Saint Germain, we have all had much greater good and Freedom in our own individual worlds. Then never let any of us for one second ever dare to think, say, feel or do anything that would try to [453] make others feel or believe that we are the Power or Understanding which is helping to set the student free. The ONLY POWER in this Activity or any other that ever did anything good for anyone is the Divine Activity of Life which is the 'Mighty I Am Presence' and no human being in this Activity shall ever take the credit in thought, feeling, word or act and remain as a Group Leader or representative of this Mighty Ascended Master Instruction of the 'I Am'—the only possible hope of Freedom or Divine Justice to the people of this world.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"We are only privileged to carry the 'Cup of Light' which the Ascended Masters have entrusted to our care! We shall oppose everybody and everything who at any time openly or under cover attempts in thought, feeling, word or action, to give credit to any one's personality, not even my own, for bringing this Ascended Master Light, Instruction and Freedom of the 'Mighty I Am Presence' to mankind and holding this Light until they are free.

"Soon the very intensity of this Light will be its own defense and only those who reveal It thru their own bodies will be believed by the people.

"All under this Radiation belongs to Saint Germain for the victory of the Light, Freedom, Protection and Divine Justice to America and her people and for the Freedom of all mankind."

The Witness: That was the same instruction given to us at all times, with the exception "not even my own," because they would say "We are the law."

I believed that the changes in my life were to be brought about within myself. It would be my dependence upon the constructive [454] law that they taught that I call to my Presence. If you were listening to your presence and it told you to do something, and they told you not to, why they were the law.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

They told us from the beginning that there were going to be precipitated temples, so we always visualized a precipitated temple. We intended to precipitate a temple in Seattle. We expected to do so by making the call and Saint Germain interceding and doing something for us and produce a physical temple. We visualized a temple on every hill in Seattle.

I wrote the letter dated October 31, 1939 and answered with the letter dated November 23, 1939, which are a part of Defendants' Exhibit PP. Said documents were offered and received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT PP.

It reads as follows:

"613 Orpheum Building
"Seattle, Washington
"October 31, 1939

"Precious Messengers of the light:

* * * * * * *

"I Am Temple of Light

"We have been decreeing for a Temple of our own, and when our lease is out at the Clarement this next year, we just must have one. In this state, any property belonging to religious, educational or benevolent organizations, is free of property tax. Can you tell me what procedure is necessary, should we purchase property for a Temple, in order to come under the tax free regulation? I would like to have you give me this information at your

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

earliest convenience, because we are all 'het up' here in Seattle, about having a place of our own! It then would be unnecessary for us to go outside to rent a place for the Appointed Messengers, when Saint Germain sends them to us." [455]

* * * * * * * *

"Ever in the Service of the Light,
"D. D. FOWLER."

"Nov. 23, 1939.

"Mrs. D. D. Fowler,
"613 Orpheum Bldg.,
"Seattle, Wash.

"Blessed Ones of the Light:

"That portion of your letter of Oct. 31st referring to the desire to own your own property upon which could be your Temple of Light, has been waiting my attention.

"This question of course will come up many times in the future for the students are all feeling the urge and need of having their own places in which to hold the meetings, and once this is possible it will make many things possible that otherwise could not be.

"We have not gone into the legal part of this, but we know from our own experience that in order to be tax free—that is exempt

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

from income taxes on Love Gifts, sales from the Reading Room, etc. that eventually all Reading Rooms will have to be incorporated under the laws of their state, then when that is accomplished application will have to be made to the United States Treasury for a ruling as to Income Tax exemptions the same as the Saint Germain Foundation.

"There is much to be considered along this line and it takes legal advise and of course each state is different. We feel the time is not far distant when this will be done in many instances, whether or not you are ready to enter into something like this [456] remains for you to decide. It will entail considerable expense and perhaps time to get a ruling from the government with present existing conditions, but unless some radical change takes place in governmental regulations somebody will have to do the pioneering, which will make it easier for others following on.

"We have been in contact with another field who feel the time is near when this should be done and should they go ahead with such arrangements we will know considerably more how to advise the rest of the fields. We can only now give you a general idea, for this of course would be an entirely different thing than any we have encountered. We do feel that something should be worked out whereby a uniform plan could be followed all over the

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

country and in the different states, altho different state laws might make them somewhat different. We feel Saint Germain will soon see that something is worked out whereby this can be cared for.

"Keep making your calls for the perfect plan and that there be no interference of obstructions put in your way for the perfect Temple coming forth. Decree #33 in the new Loose-leaf Decree book covers part of this call * * * "

"Sincerely yours,

"THE BALLARDS.

"By .....

Refreshing my memory by the letter dated October 31, 1939, the temple mentioned therein was not out of the ether. There were other temples we were going to precipitate. There were temples that would come down and absorb these temples when the golden age would come in and have perfect temples. I don't [457] know whether that was what was referred to in the Bible as the millennium or not. Different places had been promised precipitated temples, but we hadn't. We were going to make a call on Saint Germain to precipitate a temple in Seattle, but the temple referred to in the letter was going to be made with our hands.

I believe what Mr. Stickell said about the black flies in his plate poisoning his food. I don't know

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

whether he told me or not, but I took it for granted that they were on the invisible plane. I can't remember whether Mr. or Mrs. Loyd were some of the people who were at the meetings. It was my responsibility to put them out. They were disturbing. They did attend during some of the classes.

The statement made by Mr. Cassiere where he said that Mrs. Ballard had flown from California to Cleveland with a letter from Saint Germain for his dismissal and that he had challenged her and said to her during the course of their conversation, "You just admitted that Saint Germain has been in Europe for three months and you haven't been in contact with him, so I refuse to be dismissed. I am a messenger of Saint Germain, ascended or unascended" occurred in 1937, or earlier. I believed his statement. It did strike me as strange that he should talk to me like that about one of these messengers, unless he was absolutely right. I don't know how I felt about it. I don't know whether I believed him or not. I thought that it was strange he talked about it. In 1939, he said the same thing again. I can't say whether I believed him at that time or not. There was nothing he said about his purported dismissal which caused me to stay in the movement. That was only one thing that looked peculiar and I pigeon-holed that. There was another thing that looked peculiar. He said in the 1939 class in a discourse that the I Am Discourses were all written by Mrs. [458] Ballard when Mr.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Ballard was out west here supposedly having these experiences. I have had three conversations with Mr. Cassiere regarding his dismissal, one in 1936, one in 1939, and one in 1940. He didn't come in in 1940 and say, "I want to tell you again." We were eating and he was telling his experiences and he comes to this again. After he told it three times, I still kept on with the work. I think I know of one other person who also heard it, Mrs. Ward, who lives in Seattle. I can find out where you can locate her but I can't give you any information where she is now. I wouldn't say positively that she was there. The statement made by Mr. Cassiere in which he told me that I knew why they were asking all the people to buy decree books, because they wanted to sell a lot of decree books occurred in October, 1940. I can't just say whether I had any question about that time about Mrs. Ballard's loyalty to me. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2744) I knew she was trying to sponsor a class in Seattle independent of mine. I wouldn't say that that made me mad. That is not the reason the conversation came up between me and Mr. Cassiere. Thereupon, the telegram from the witness to Miss Majerus was offered and received in evidence as

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT QQ

"Seattle, Washington,
"October 8, 1940.
12:03 p. m.

"Bertha Majerus, Biltmore Hotel,
"Los Angeles, Calif.

"Agitators here claim Mrs. Ballard sponsoring new Seattle group. Is this authentic. Please answer RCA immediately.

"D. D. FOWLER."

Before I ever had that conversation with Mr. Cassiere, I had heard about Mrs. Ballard, but it wasn't authentic. We just wondered whether it was true or not. [459]

Redirect Examination

When you hear gossip, you know, just gossip and word is passed around—it hadn't come direct from Mrs. Ballard and the students were talking about it and so I just wired to see if it were true or not. To my knowledge, Mrs. Ballard was not sponsoring another group in Seattle when I had this conversation with Mr. Cassiere regarding the sale of decree books. The decree book, Exhibit 67, comes before the lose leaf decree book. I had one of those books myself. I obtained it from the Sindelar Studios. They were a dollar. Glancing at Decree No. 53, I see that that is one of the decrees to which I am referring.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Mr. Lazarus read from the September, 1940 issue of "The Voice," as follows: Reading from page 9.

> "A very great service has been rendered the Southern part of California tonight. Oh, that you could understand and realize sometimes when you are just in exact compliance with the Great Law (and I mean by that the Great Cosmic Law) how one of your calls will produce such gigantic results, as I am about to relate. All discarnate entities have been removed from Southern California! (applause—audience rising)."

Reading from page 13:

> "For instance in the requirements of your city and coast activity here, I do not think you quite realize the position you are in. Will you believe Me, when I tell you that We have prevented time, and time and time again certain spy activities, which would have drawn a force into Mexico that would have destroyed your cities here in Southern California before you could scarcely wink your eye?" [460]

Reading from page 26:

> "You see before you these Messengers who have given the greatest proof the world has ever had of this Great Law and in a condition, the worse the earth has ever known, without asking for a dime, they call forth from the Treasure-house of their 'I Am Presence' the supply that is required."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

The Witness: I heard references made to smoking and sex activity during my association with the Ballard movement. Those references were made from time to time by the Ballards. I was attempting from time to time to the best of my ability to follow their teachings regarding that subject matter. Mrs. Ballard said that it was possible to tune in on other classes. I heard Mrs. Ballard make the statement which you quote from "The Magic Presence" as follows:

> "Two days and two nights later we emerged from the eternal flame wearing our new bodies of immortal endurance. The inharmony of earth cannot register within these permanently."

Mr. Lazarus then read from Defendants' Exhibit NN as follows:

> "Easter Sunday evening, we had a complete surprise for the students—including Group Leaders and Helpers. During contemplation, while the musicians were playing I Am Come —Daddy's large picture was quickly and quietly placed, over our violet velvet curtain—right between our pictures of Jesus and Saint Germain. At the close of the contemplation, everyone rose and applauded and wept for joy."

The Witness: The picture which I referred to in Exhibit NN is a picture purchased from the Saint Germain Press for [461] $25. Some of the

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

other pictures were purchased from the Press and also from the Sindelar Studios. In the special study group meetings, I was regulated by these letters such as Exhibit 186 in regard to the handling of the study groups. We did not have any dictations from the ascended masters at our study groups. The Ballards appeared in Seattle with dictations received from the ascended masters at their classes. Their classes were held in a different manner than the study groups.

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit HH as follows:

> "We are decreeing for you to return to Seattle and every Sunday night we sing No. 33 in the new book to help bring this about. Also we have started a fund for this purpose."

Regarding my statement in Defendants' Exhibit HH that we are decreeing for Mrs. Ballard's return to Seattle and are starting a fund for that purpose, they told us if we made the call the fund would be to help defray the expenses when they would come.

Mr. Larazus read from Exhibit LL as follows:

> "However, one of our most devoted students to the Light said to me yesterday, 'I am so grateful and it was so wonderful the Goddess of Light mentioned you in the Oakland class as it seemed to settle some of the agitators who were either looking for sympathy or for trouble."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

I was present when the Goddess of Light mentioned my name in the Oakland class. Mr. Ballard was speaking at the time the Goddess of Light made this statement. I have never seen the Goddess of Light. It would embarrass me to tell you the lovely things she had to say about me. I recall Mr. Cassiere making the statements from the platform that are [462] mentioned by me there in my letter to Mrs. Ballard dated December 11, 1940, Defendants' Exhibit GG.

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit II as follows:

"We had the privilege of going out to Dr. Kirk's beautiful estate yesterday. I do not think anyone could be more appreciative of the privilege that was his in meeting you, on the Mezzanine Floor of the Biltmore, and of having such a fine talk with you. Every time I see him, he mentions that meeting; and he has said to me: 'To think of having the opportunity of shaking hands and talking to someone like Mrs. Ballard—someone who associates with the Gods!"

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit JJ as follows:

"The Group Meetings are for the purpose of going thru the Outlines as given and no discussion other than the necessary announcements pertaining to the work. This has not been followed in the past year I find, and much discord has driven in because of the lack of obedience to the Divine Director's request.

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

"As I stated in the Shrine Class we are revising the Outlines and all Groups in the future must stay with these Outlines and build the pattern at the Inner Level which the Divine Director can use for certain protection of America. I shall expect all Groups to do this, and please do not give voice to any more personal opinions, etc. If something is wrong, apply the Law and clear it out thru your calls, but do not harass the Students. This must not be done."

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit GG as follows:

[463]

"I haven't written you before, concerning Brother Bill's Class here, because it seemed better to say nothing at all, than to tell you the truth. The one thing I regret the most is that you were not here to see and hear for yourself, all that went on.

"When Brother Bill first arrived here, he told me that down south 'they' had the idea I had the big head because the Ascended Masters had mentioned my name; and he told me of the jealously aroused because of the jeweled flags we carry; that he felt he could 'put me in right' if I would tell the manufacturer's name, so he could pass the information on to Frances Ekey."

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

Page 2:

"Now, for some of the information Bill gave out from the platform:

"Speaking of my having the big head—you should have seen Bill strut across the platform, and scream to high heaven: 'I am an Appointed Messenger of Saint Germain—ascended or unascended, and that is more than anyone in Seattle can say!'

"A year ago, when Bill was here, he hadn't seen his Presence, Jesus or Saint Germain; but this year, he boasted from the platform: 'I've seen my Presence, I've seen Jesus and I've seen Saint Germain!' And then again: 'I am an Appointed Messenger.'

"Another thing Bill said was that the I Am Discourses were dictated to you while Daddy Ballard was in the West, having his experiences with Saint Germain.

"One afternoon, before just a handful of students, Bill had a hallucination. He decided there were some [464] spies in the audience. He started screaming that because of these spies, his own name would probably be in the headlines the next day, and that what he was saying would be sent to Washington, D. C., and that within five hours, the whole thing would be in Berlin, Rome and Moscow."

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit FF as follows:

"I have been encouraging the students to

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

start groups in their own homes, and many of them have done this. Some families get together every day and issue the decrees together.

"I was happy to hear from Mr. Chenoweth that you will hold a class in Florida; and that is one class I should certainly love to attend. Of course, it goes without saying, I should love attending All the classes, in All the cities!

"Back to the broadcasts again—I am happy to report that each week several people—new people, that is, come in for information about the work, from having heard the radio program. Some of them will say:

"'Oh, Mrs. Ballard, I heard you on the air Sunday.' And someone called me by telephone here at home, addressing me as 'Mrs. Ballard!'

"The work is much easier since you were here, and will so continue, in our great joy and anticipation of your return."

Recross Examination

He made those statements at the 1940 ten-day class in Seattle. I couldn't tell the day.

Q. Can you give me the name of a single person that was there and heard him make them?

Ths Witness: Well, I think everyone that was there [465] heard him. Well, I don't like to mention names because you go to them—I know Mr. and Mrs. Leighton were there. I don't know his

(Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler.)

address. His first name is Roy. He possibly heard some of these. Some of them were given afternoon and evening. He only came in the evening. I went alone to the meeting when I heard those statements. I imagine 75 or 100 people were there. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2765) I can't give any other names of people who heard them. Mr. and Mrs. Leighton left the activity when I left it.

Redirect Examination

At the time I wrote that letter, Exhibit GG, I was still a member of the movement and still reporting as to happenings which occurred in Seattle. I still believed in the constructive part of the movement. [466]

ARTHUR M. LOOMIS,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 64, the August, 1940 issue of "The Voice", last page.

I am the president of the Econolite Corporation, which manufactures items such as the one marked Government's Exhibit 191. We have manufactured such items for the Saint Germain Press. I made a memorandum from the records of the number of charts which we have sold to the Saint Germain Press and it shows that we sold 312 Magic Presence Charts for a total sales price of $5,762.81. The

(Testimony of Arthur M. Loomis.)

prices and figures and amounts on said memorandum are correct. Thereupon said memorandum was offered and admitted in evidence as Government's Exhibit 200.

Cross Examination

The price shown is a fair price for the work done and materials furnished, but we did not furnish the lithographs for the Magic Presence Charts. We did furnish everything else.

ISOBEL SHINN,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

My mother's name was Deresar de Carranza. I was born in Argentina. My mother paints. She is 77 years old and it is difficult for her to speak English very fluently. I saw my mother paint a picture while I was living in Belgium and about 14 or 15 years of age. The picture which you have shown me, Government's Exhibit 201, is the one I saw her paint. She fools around with her painting and it took her about a year to do it. It was painted in about 1915. I didn't see anyone posing for the picture, though I was present on many occasions while it was being painted. I saw her place on the picture the characters that are on either side of the head and the scroll which was upon it. I was pres-

(Testimony of Isobel Shinn.)

ent when the picture was finished. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2776). My mother painted other pictures. [467]

Exception No. 75

Mr. Neukom: I would like to offer at this time the picture.

Mr. Peterson: That is objected to upon the ground that it is incompetent, irrelevant and not material to any issue here. There is no proper foundation laid for its introduction into evidence at this time. Its introduction would be hearsay as against every defendant in this case.

Q. Is this the same picture that I hold in my hands that your mother was painting and which took about a year to paint?

A. Yes. It is the one I gave to the Postal Inspector about a year ago. It had been in the possession of my mother until that time.

The Court: It will be received subject to the same objection and an exception allowed to each of the defendants.

Thereupon, Government's Exhibit 201 was admitted in evidence.

The Witness: My mother told me what the characters mean. She told me they were in a foreign language. I am forty years old. I came to the United States at the end of 1915. My mother brought the picture with her. After we were in the United States photographs were taken of the picture. The small photograph which you show me is one of the photo-

(Testimony of Isobel Shinn.)

graphs that I turned over to the Postal Inspectors a little over a year ago. It is one of the photographs that was taken of the picture which my mother painted, Government's Exhibit 201.

Exception No. 76

Q. In the year 1917 or 1918, did you ever see your mother passing out to friends or acquaintances copies of photographs similar to the one I am now showing you? A. Yes.

Thereupon the answer was stricken by the court for the purpose of objection. [468]

Mr. Peterson: The objection is this: It is utterly immaterial to any issue in this case, whether this witness or her mother, or anyone else for that matter, in 1917 or 1918 were passing out replicas of pictures counsel has in his hand, which, I assume, is a replica of this last exhibit.

Mr. Armstrong: Now, if the Court please, in reference to this photograph, it is easy to discern from a comparison that they are not the same. The question of having characters similar on the background is not important. There is a group known to the advanced esoteric students that are members of a certain school, so-called the Lesser Mysteries, and about the pictures of all of those appear those same characters, men that live in widely separated sections of the earth. So those characters do not mean anything insofar as association with this particular picture is concerned.

(Testimony of Isobel Shinn.)

The Court: Objection overruled and exception allowed to the defendants on all of the grounds urged by Mr. Peterson and Judge Armstrong.

The Witness: Yes.

Mr. Neukom read from Exhibit 97.

Exception No. 77

Mr. Neukom: The small picture, your Honor, will be Government's Exhibit next in order.

Mr. Cannon: Our objection goes to that also.

The Court: Same objection and same ruling as to the Exhibit now just offered in evidence.

Thereupon the picture was received in evidence, marked "Exhibit 202".

Mr. Neukom read from Exhibit 91.

Cross Examination

I have lived in Los Angeles for around 13 years. I came from Belgium. We came here to Hollywood, stayed a year, went to [469] San Diego; from San Diego to New York, from New York we came to Altadena and then to Los Angeles. We came to Los Angeles at the end of 1916 and at the very beginning of 1918 we went to San Diego. I came to the United States in 1916 around November. Before we arrived in New York we lived in Brussels, Belgium for four years. We went there in 1912 when I was 15 or 16 years old. I went to two or three Catholic Convents in Belgium. When my mother painted the picture she was living at the Square

(Testimony of Isobel Shinn.)

Ambirorix. That was two years before and two years during the occupation of Brussels in the last war. My mother came with me when I came to the United States in 1916. We had three pictures with us. My mother is at home in Los Angeles now. She is able to get around and is an intelligent lady. She had some large photographs taken of Government's Exhibit 201. Someone came and she gave permission to him to take the pictures. It was a regular photographer. I don't know whether the pictures were for her own use or not. She kept one or two, but people came in and asked, "Can I have a picture", and I remember going to the drug store and having some prints taken, 12 or 24 of them, because people out in Hollywood all went crazy for the picture and they all asked for it, and my mother didn't call it Saint Germain, by the way. (Tr. Vol. 17, p. 2794). That is true also of the other pictures; someone took pictures of them and gave my mother copies and the film. My mother didn't publish the photographs herself. The pictures were brought through the Customs office with other things. I did not pay any attention as to whether we declared them. I was only 15 years old. I was probably looking at the City of Hoboken instead of paying attention to what my mother was doing. I don't remember the names of the people who came and got the pictures. I remember when it was done. It was in Hollywood, and I know that was in 1917, the very end of 1916 and all the year 1917 when we moved

(Testimony of Isobel Shinn.)

to San Diego in January, 1918, and my mother belonged to [470] the society for a year and so they die and we quit it. The picture is the same as when we brought it. It has been in the closet at her house at 6031 Third Avenue, Los Angeles.

ALPHAEUS MOSHER,

being called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I knew Mr. Ballard in 1929 and 1930 in Los Angeles. I saw a picture similar to Government's Exhibit 202 in the possession of Mr. Ballard.

Mr. Armstrong: There is no controversy about that. These people were members of the Theosophical Society and had it then since 1929.

The Court: There is no controversy about that. Yes, he testified about that.

The witness was excused and thereupon the Government offered in evidence the so-called Mt. Shasta letters as Exhibit 203, and the following proceedings took place: [471]

Exception No. 78

At the former trial in the same District Court, of the same defendants now on trial before this Court, other defendants included in the former trial having been acquitted, the contention was made by

the Government that certain experiences as professed to have been had by Mr. Ballard at Mount Shasta had not been had for the reason that at the time professed by Mr. Ballard in such articles to have occurred at Mount Shasta, Mr. Ballard was not actually at Mount Shasta. To rebut this contention of the Government, while Mrs. Ballard was on the witness stand, there was produced by Mrs. Ballard a series of letters and envelopes received by her from Mr. Ballard from Shasta which definitely establish that the Government was wrong in its theory and that Mr. Ballard had actually been at Mount Shasta at the time in question. This proof convinced the Government that their theory was wrong and that witnesses who had been called by them to establish that Mr. Ballard was not at Shasta were incorrect. In connection with the present trial, the Government makes no contention that Mr. Ballard was not at Shasta at the time related by Mr. Ballard under certain publications that he was so present. However, the Government desired to introduce in evidence the said letters that had been introduced in the former trial by the defendants for the purpose of rebutting the former Government claim of lack of presence of Mr. Ballard at Mount Shasta; in this case, however, for other purposes, and by way of certain alleged admissions it further appeared that after the conclusion of the former trial, by order of court the said exhibits had been returned to Mrs. Ballard, but prior to this return, the Government had caused said exhibits to be

photostated. It was photostats that the Government thought to introduce in this trial, no objection being made by defendants as to the authenticity of the photostats. The facts relating to the means by which said letters were procured, and the purpose for which they were [472] introduced in the former trial, was admitted by the Government.

The defendants objected to the introduction thereof upon the ground that the use thereof violated Articles 4, 5 and 6 of the Constitution; that the statements and the letters were not voluntarily produced, but involuntarily, by reason of the necessity of rebutting the erroneous position that the Government took in the former trial.

That said documents had been produced at the former trial and were now in possession of the Government by reason of physical or moral compulsion; that they amounted to a violation of the Constitution against unlawful search and seizure; that moreover, Mr. Ballard, the author, was not available for cross-examination thereon, being deceased; that moreover, under no theory could they be admissible under any other defendants than Mrs. Ballard. The objection was overruled after extensive argument, and exception allowed, not only generally to the objection, but also as to the objection as to its admissibility against defendants other than Mrs. Ballard.

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 203

was received in evidence.

"Mon. 10:30, 8/11/30.

"Mt. Shasta City

"Beloved Meta:—

"Blessed Angel of Light.

"My Sweet White Dove:— Your blessed letter of the 7th just rec'd. first letter since I moved to this address. last friday. I feel so impelled to get a P. O. Lock box. it is 45¢ for 3 months. as that is the time I have given myself to make good in the writing, I think I will get a box, then can get any mail that comes on Sunday.

* * * * * * *

"* * * Please get me all the information you can, [473] as to length of short stories. the kind, most saleable. & etc. Dear Heart, Vol. II of Spaldings. is more and more wonderfull. Bottom of pg. 44. God is a Loving, & Bottom of pg. 45, All are inspired by God, when that inspiration is for good or right, and all can be inspired by God. at all times if they only will. I had been reading & went down to the store, when I come back the book was open and these words were the first I saw. several pgs. from where I had been reading. So I know it was a direct message to me. It is so rediculous to think the Almight God in us. cannot do instantly what ever we

desire to do that is good. It is all a matter of concentration & Stillness."

* * * * * * *

"RAY"

* * * * * * *

"9-29-30

"Beloved Meta.

"Blessed Angel of Light.

"My Sweet White Dove.

"My precoius Diamond Heart:—

"Yours of the 27, received, with Two $ enclosed, thank you so much, precious one. Also came the two envelopes of booklets and the Thomas Lecture, the peculiar part of it was, in the Unity Daily Word, on Sept. 29 being today was surely a direct message to me, Through the eyes of Spirit,—perfect vision— I behold all things and Persons as they exist in Truth.

"In Unveiled Mysteries, I sure have been doing just that.

Yesterday I got runing way ahead in conciousnese, first thing I knew, I blending an experience to come, into [474] the one I am writing now. I was swimming along and something said you are wasting a page, I stopped, began reading it over and saw my mistake. Gee, it is so glorious, so fascinating, I just love it, I worked from 7 A. M. to 9 P. M. yesterday and was pretty tired last night, I have

over 5,000 words done on 'Unveiled Mysteries' and still going fine, but as a typest I am not a big hit, but I miss words because I get to reaching out to fast, Gosh some times I get where I just want to grab a handful of words and throw them in place on the page, in order to catch up.

"You can use Brother XIV, if that seems right to you, you are absolutely right there must be no way these books can be traced to me, the Experiences being so astounding people would come from all over the world trying to find the writer.

"His Highness says, when the First book begins to get into circulation, I will be wise to change from here, for immediately people will begin to come here quietly to try to find out who Ray is, knowing it was written in this locality, but he said, that should not be changed.

"He says after the books are out for six months then that frantic desire to find Ray will subside to a large degree.

"I cannot go to any of these little towns for these people are passing back and forth through them every few days, but before that I will have found out the situation at Jackson, Wyoming.

"Gee this is all more Fascinating than a Sherlock Holmes.

"Thanks for the booklets, probably wont do much reading for the next ten days, while I

have this Typewriter, I like the Royal fine.

[475]

"Yes I am quite Comfortable thanks to you my precious Angel love.

"You just bet we will soon have it so R. can come out in the mountains and run to his hearts content, I hope in the next letter you will have the manuscript. can hardly wait for your comment.

"We sure have given some service in this old world of ours, when you read 'Unveiled Mysteries,' no wonder I have been so interested in Mining, this time, if you love the first book you will worship the second."

* * * * * * *

"RAY"

* * * * * * *

"Oct. 1, 1930

"Beloved Angel:—

"I have been held so steady at the typewriter, havent had a minute to get a word to you, so am making one grand rush now to get this off to you, I am now under ground on the Madeira, branch of the Amazon. and I have Just taken down three typed pages of the most marvelous words ever uttered it seems to me, by the Being who Officiated there Sixteen Thousand Years ago, I think this is the place once intimated to us, I began this morning and dident stop until after three dident dare to stop less I loose the connection it is simply marvelous.

"No letter again today so am still more shriveled up, if no letter in the morning I will have dissapeared completely, I am simply cant wait to know if you like the narrativ.

"Worlds of love and blessing to you both."

"Your Adoring

"RAY" [476]

"Mount Shasta City

"Sept. 4th, 1930

"Beloved Meta.

"Blessed Angel of Light.

"My Sweet White Dove:

"How wonderfully blessed I am this day, for I received the two express packages, yesterday afternoon, and how greatful I am to have those blessed pictures, how exquisite, you have framed them. Those blessed books, how I gobbled up that dictionary, but found aside from my generous use of the L's It wasent quite as bad as I thought, so I immediately corrected the Manuscript to date, so I feel quite relieved.

"Those blessed Master books every thing is sure in them, and the Inner Secret, Gee how like mine was his experience, yet, notice how he says the great law vindicated him, its wonderful.

"This morning, your three letters of the 31st, 1st, and 2nd, came, with the Magazinette, what blessed letters, thank you love.

"I sure am mighty glad to have the perscription for hemorrhoids for I did have them very

uncomfortable, for three days, but I am all right again now. but its a fine thing to have on hand, I feel it is real*y* wonderful. Your letter to Deans is fine, just stand firm on that, am enclosing it.

"I real*y* think the statement; 'I now release the gold mine within me.' and real*y* feel it, is the most powerful thing we have in our use for prosperity. and sure is the correct thing for the veins.

"I am getting a little more speed on this machine, thank the Lord, Yes, it was offered to me. Oh! I am [477] having a great time, to real*y* feel and know I am accomplishing something I have longed to do.

"Your flash of Illumination, in yours of the 2nd, is certainly fine and correct, I will copy it and meditate on it.

"Yes, I will be careful of the eats, for the inner clean is inclined to increase the appetite, however, I sure wish you and Dear Heart, were here for lunch today, for I have some of the most gorgeous strawberries, grown near here at Castella, two boxes for a quarter, so we dine sumptuously, on short cake today.

"The M. W. Catalogue, Sure gives Some good ideas all right, as to article, quality, price and etc."

* * * * * * *

"RAY"

Typewritten copies of said letters were received in evidence as Government's Exhibit 203-A.

JANE FERGUSON,

called as a witness in behalf of the Government, testified as follows:

I am acquainted with Mrs. Ballard. I am married. I was acquainted with Guy W. Ballard. Both my husband and I were appointed messengers of the I Am movement. This was in January of 1935. I first met the Ballards on August 26, 1934, in their home in Chicago. In December of 1934, I was with the Ballards in New York in a hotel room of the Ballards. At that time Mrs. Ballard said she had been working very hard on the manuscript "The Magic Presence" and she pointed to her table where she had a violet colored typewriter and there were some papers upon which she had been apparently typing. I received the letter dated December 20, 1934,

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 204,

signed by Mr. Ballard through the mails.

Said Exhibit was thereupon received in evidence, and [478] reads as follows:

"Beloved Students of Light:—

"Your blessed letter of the 17th rec'd. Again you were the victorious children of Light. Yes! go on with the class work. I feel you will be authorized Messengers soon as we are on the Ray. * * *"

* * * * * * *

"The 'Magic Presence' is almost ready for the final typing. Orders are pouring in so feel

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

sure money will be ready as soon as we are."

* * * * * * *

"The Messengers

"THE BALLARDS."

I received a letter dated January 1, 1934, but it arrived shortly after January 1, 1935, through the mail with the typed signature, "Saint Germain."

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 205,

and reads as follows:

"Saint Germain's

"Private New Year's Day Message.

"My dear Mr. and Mrs. Ferguson

"Beloved Students of the Light:

"Great is the joy that it is my privilege to inform you that you have been made Messengers of the Light under this radiation.

"It is my wish that you remain subject to my direction through these Messengers until such time as you are able to draw forth the Visible Ray into your own midst through which I may dictate to you audibly and direct whatever is needful."

On the 19th of May, 1937, I received a letter from Mr. and [479] Mrs. Ballard from the Ritz Carlton Hotel in Philadelphia. I had written some of my own handwriting on the letter which I attempted to erase; otherwise, it is as I received it.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 206,

and reads as follows:

"Mr. William Irwin Ferguson:

"Mrs. Jane Ferguson:

"Owing to your continued spreading of vicious falsehood, concerning My work and the Magnificent Dictations of Discourses by many of the Ascended Masters, your compel Me to withdraw your Messengership, which I gave you represent Me and My Work.

"It is unfortunate that Mrs. Ferguson must be included in this, as her Light is bright and her heart is right; but being associated with you, I am compelled to withdraw the Messengership from her, also.

"If you could realize your great mistake in this attitude to My Work, you could call on the Law of Forgiveness and thus avoid the conditions you must meet in your next embodiment, through the causes set into action in this one.

"You have thrown yourself out of the Radiation of any of the Ascended Masters, by this vicious false attitude toward My Work, in claiming the Discourses, since the book of 'I AM DISCOURSES' was dictated, are not by the Ascended Masters.

"I tell you every Discourse in the Magazine and every Discourse dictated since the book of 'I AM DISCOURSES' was printed, is just as

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

REAL as those Discourses are and were dictated by the Ascended Masters as claimed.

"You have built up a vicious hate entity that is surely destroying you and the beautiful work that could [480] have been done.

"You shall not any longer represent Me, have the privilege of selling the books or in any way representing this Work. This you have brought upon yourself. I have tried in every way to help you, that your attitude might be changed before it was too late.

"This closes your door to Our Assistance, until such time as you will earnestly and sincerely call on the law of Forgiveness and STOP spreading falsehood and discord in My Work.

"May your 'Mighty I AM Presence' release you from the tragic danger you are in."

"SAINT GERMAIN"

We had already decided to give up the work when we received this letter, about the 1st of April we decided, that is, April of 1937. While in the movement my husband and I conducted classes from place to place. We sold books that we procured from the Saint Germain Press. During the first year we received no discount. However, about November of 1935 we began to receive a 30 percent discount or commission.

In New York in 1934, at the breakfast table at the Breslin Hotel, when I was present, Mrs. Ballard

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

stated in response to a query as to a young man in one of my classes, as to "What about insurance policies", "Well, what kind of policies were they?" I replied that one policy would mature in a couple of years. Mrs. Ballard said to tell them to drop the straight life and to wait until the other policy had matured and then cash in on it. I have heard Mrs. Ballard discuss the subject matter of cataclysms many times. In August, 1934, in Chicago, I heard Mrs. Ballard state, Mr. Sherwood Pinkerton, Mrs. Moisher, Mary Ketcham and Mrs. Farghar also being present; also, Dr. Hargraves and his wife being present, that the time was very short and we would have a cataclysm in [481] September of 1936. She mentioned cataclysms a number of times in different classes. One time in September of 1935 in Kansas City from the platform, she spoke of a cataclysm that was to occur and told of having saved both the West and the East coast. Before that, on the West coast in the spring of 1935, she had stated that if it had not been for their work many cities on the West coast would have slipped into the ocean. She stated this in private conversation with me. I bought the books of the Ballard movement and in buying them I believed the representations contained in them. Before becoming a messenger, I contributed money to Mrs. Ballard. At the time I went through a class I gave her $50.00. I believed at that time in the representations Mrs. Ballard was making. I received a letter dated February 4, 1935, bearing Mr. Ballard's signature.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

Said document was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 207,

and reads as follows:

"Miami, Florida.
"28 N. W. 8th Ave.
"Feb. 4-35

"Blessed Fergusons.
"Beloved Messengers of 'Light'.

* * * * * * *

"We went through 3 years to prove and solve the question confronting the messengers there. Enough Divine Love poured out to the class will in time release the gift of money from the class as balance to the Messengers.

"In the achievement of this height of consciousness it is perfectly right and permissible for one of the old student not a messenger, to call the attention of the class in the absence of the messengers to their privilege to make gifts of money to the messengers who bring [482] to them the transcendent Truths and freedom who must be financially supported to carry on the work. That it is the right and privilege of the students to do this.

"The paragraph on the pink slip is not meant to convey that the student should not make gifts of money to the messengers. But that paragraph has been a tremendous safeguards to us many times. But the application blanks show the stu-

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

dents that it is their privilege to make gifts of money to the messengers.

"The letter of your student in N. C. through whom the marvelous healing has manifested, is wonderful indeed. The mighty 'I Am' Presence bless him ever with greater and greater healing power.

"Keep silently calling your Mighty 'I Am' Presence to charge the classes with financial supply and release to you. * * *

"As the Messengers go deeper into the consciousness of the Mighty 'I Am' Presence, charging your world and activity with your limitless supply of money you will find the supply will always be there.

"But the danger point is, if the messengers unknowingly begin to look to the class for supply instead of the mighty 'I AM' Presence they may unknowingly cut off their supply. Because even through the class the attention for the supply must be on the Mighty 'I Am' Presence."

* * * * * * *

"The Messengers

"THE BALLARDS."

"Per G. W. B."

I knew Paul Stickell. He was also a messenger. I received circulars from Mr. Stickell announcing classes that he was to hold. We also prepared circulars and sent them out. [483]

The circular referred to was received in evidence as Government's Exhibit 208.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

I received a letter dated January 17, 1937, which was before my dismissal, signed "G. W. Ballard."

Said letter was received in evidence as

GOVERNMENT'S EXHIBIT 209,

and reads as follows:

"Biltmore Hotel, Los Angeles, Calif.,
"January 17, 1937.

"My dear Mr. Ferguson:

"Your wire was received, but impossible to answer sooner.

"Miss Majerus has her orders from Sanit Germain that all book work from the beginning was to be kept on a cash basis, and this will be done. When we have the books printed we have to pay cash, why should we give credit to others and pay cash ourselves?

"Now, it is necessary to correct a number of other things. Saint Germain was here a few days ago and says he will not tolerate any more criticism of ourselves or Miss Majerus by you. To do so silently would be bad enough, but to do so openly in your class is unpardonable.

* * * * *

"Saint Germain told the Appointed Messengers in the Breakfast Talk in Detroit, that if they did not keep themselves sufficiently harmonized, not even the Ascended Masters could help or protect them. You are in danger of having your Messengership withdrawn.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

"We are following the Ascended Master's direction and have not made any mistakes. When you criticize us you criticize the Ascended Masters, so don't do it again.

"We appreciate your lovely wire sent to the Shrine Class, which far transcended any class so far. We are pleased to know of your good class in Boston. [484]

"THE BALLARDS
"By G. W. BALLARD"

Mr. Lazarus read from Government's Exhibit 43, the November, 1938 issue of "The Voice," at p. 19.

My husband and I became members of the I Am at the same time. We were in the movement at all times together and traveled about together. We conducted classes in Chicago, Detroit, Cleveland, Boston, St. Louis, Columbus and Akron, also, Elgin. We were sincere in our teachings. My sincerity began to wane in the summer of 1936, but at this time I didn't communicate with the Ballards about it nor confront them with it. It was something the Ballards had done that caused my doubts and all this time my husband was interested in it and very sincere. I still continued to conduct classes and continued to manifest complete sincerity because there were some thing I continued to believe. I continued to follow the work as I had been doing and I don't recall indicating by word or deed that I was not thoroughly sincere. In December of 1936, I sent a telegram to the Ballards.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

Said telegram was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT "RR",

and reads as follows:

"The Ballards, Figueroa Hotel, Figueroa & 9 St. Los Angeles.

"To our beloved Ballards and the blessed students in the L A Shrine class Christmas greetings of joy and light. May the expansion of the Christ light be so great during this Christmas season that the city of L A and the shoe world—" (it is written 'shoe' here but it must mean 'whole world')—"will feel its radiance and accept the presence of the Mighty I Am. To each one individually we send love and the wish that this holiday season be a glorious spiritual feast of light and love and the new year be full of the most transcendent experiences you have [485] ever known and your light so expand that you gain your complete freedom in your ascension. Our hearts greatest love and gratitude to the blessed master Jesus and our beloved Saint Germain for their priceless gift of love in these imperishable teachings as given in the blessed books and to our beloved messengers the Ballards. Our deepest love and gratitude for your ceaseless loving faithfulness and willingness to be the channel for this ascended master message to come through. All light love blessings until the ascension marks your eternal victory. Lovingly."

"THE FERGUSONS".

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

On February 4, 1935, we received from the Ballards, Government's Exhibit 207. The Messengers referred to therein are all messengers, including my husband and myself, and including the reference to the fact that students might make gifts of money to the messengers. I don't think it was myself and husband who suggested getting money by way of love gifts. My husband wrote a letter dated January 31, 1935, to the Ballards which we sent to them and which is the letter that prompted the reply as contained in the February 4, 1935, letter from the Ballards to us (Government's Exhibit 207).

Said letter of January 31, 1935, was received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT "SS",

and reads as follows:

"5666 Ridge Avenue
"Chicago, Illinois
"January 31st, 1935

"Dear Blessed Ballards:

* * * * *

"We think best to tell you Mr. Fergusons impression when he first heard the article 'Condition of Acceptance' read. The quotations,—'that at no time is there ever to [486] be a price set upon them or money to be connected in any way'—'The LIGHT never will be bought with anyone's dollars'—'must be given to others

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

in the same way it is received—without money and without price'—'this condition is retroactive and to it there never can be an exception'. He received the impression from these statements that he was forbidden to give any money for the work. The selfishness of the outer world would gladly seize upon this as an order to give nothing—an order which it is most willing to accept.

"We appreciate that this must not be commercialized or a price set upon it yet we remember your words that 'the Messengers must be supported' and we believe most people are willing to support them if they understood the Law which Jesus commanded—'Freely ye have received freely give'. This law applies to both Messengers and students. But this seems not to be understood in this field, as is the experience of other Messengers as well as ourselves. Mr. F. talked with Mr. Stickle this afternoon and fine that his and Mrs. Bliss' experience is the same as ours. * * *"

* * * * *

"We want to do the perfect thing—we have neither one had a sense of feeling or thought on the money during the class we have been so rejoiced we have something precious to give to whoever comes, but we also realize the best way for the sinister force could stop this teaching would be by suggesting to the students to

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

withhold all financial support, so it would seem from experiences of the Messengers here that the outer has misinterpreted the real meaning and grasp the excuse to not give to help carry on the work which would naturally carry the Messengers [487] along too.

"We note this is partially overcome in the statement on the Application blank used in the New York classes, we would like your permission to use a duplicate of that form.

"We know this resistance must be overcome and we believe that some people feel they want to give and support the teaching from which they receive so much good and yet the conditions sound as though they were forbidden to give.

"I want to tell you my own experience when I went through your class. My I AM told me the amount and at first the outer said—'no half that was enough' but when I took the money from my hoard I just reached in and took out some bills and it was exactly what my 'I AM' had said and I accepted it as the right thing to do. And I am grateful that I did accept for I feel my obedience has brought me blessings.

"We have had calls for afternoon classes but we cannot have classes in the afternoon and evening too and continue to hold the position we have that supports us. We are looking forward to devoting all our time to this blessed

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

work but we feel that the solution of the non-support of this field must be solved—not only for ourselves but the other Messengers as well.

"We expect to start another ten day class Monday Feb 4th and would appreciate a reply before then—if you do not have time to write please wire us a night letter 'collect' * * *"

* * * * * * *

"JANE & IRWIN" [488]

In this letter, defendants' Exhibit "SS", referring to the fact that money from the students would not only carry on the work but also carry on the messengers, we meant that it would carry us on. We could not live on air and we had not reached the point of precipitation. In this letter when it refers to my experiences when I went through the class in which I gave certain moneys and which refers to the fact that my outer self said to give only half a much as I did but in which I was prompted by my I Am Presence to give a greater amount, was my own experience. When we wrote this letter we had in mind giving up our own lucrative employment so that we could devote all of our time to the movement and still be supported. Before my husband started in this movement he was a very intent Bible student. He frequently, during our classes, quoted at length from the Bible. I never attended any classes with Mrs. Bliss nor any classes that she gave. I did attend one group meeting that

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

she conducted. I have heard Mrs. Ballard refer to the Bible as a filthy book. This was in Los Angeles in 1936 at the Shrine Auditorium class and it was this reference to the Bible that caused me to become dissatisfied, but I still struggled to believe. On July 30, 1936, in Chicago, Mr. Ferguson and I conducted a special meeting in which copious quotations were made from the Bible. When we first started to teach, Mr. Ferguson said that we could not do so unless we could use the Bible and Mr. Ballard said, "Surely, I wish to God we knew enough about the Bible so that we could use it." This was in November of 1934. Mrs. Ballard was present when Mr. Ballard made that statement in 1934 about the Bible.

Defendants' Exhibit "TT" was received in evidence.

This is an outline of the class we conducted on July 30, 1936. The Mr. "F" referred to is Mr. Ferguson.

The student referred to in whom marvelous healing was manifested in Government's Exhibit 207 (February 4, 1935) was [489] a Mrs. Billheimer. It is hard to say whether I thought the healing effected was by reason of the I Am teachings because these teachings and the Bible were so closely associated at all times in our teachings but not in the Ballards teachings. Yes, we were let out of the work because the Ballards said that we were not teaching it correctly. However, when I wrote the

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

letter I believed that Mrs. Billheimer had been healed by the I Am teachings.

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT "UU"

was received in evidence, and reads as follows:

"Tuesday April 1st. 1935

"Dearly Beloved and Highly Blesst Ballards

"Your letter of March 18th recieved and thru your home we have been advised of your progress across the U. S. and learned from there of your arrival in Los A.

"We thank The 'Mighty Majestic I AM Presence' and The Legion Of Light which we asked to surround and protect you on that drive, for your safe arrival.

"The outpouring of DIVINE LOVE, POWER, AND WISDOM on *thos* Blessed Students of THE LIGHT in Toledo was and is nothing less than MIRACULOUS. Greater peace, harmony and acceptance could not be manifest than was there. The place of meeting, the care for our comfort and all were PERFECT. Sixty Eight were qualified to enter into the fellowship of THE ASCENDED MASTERS—it was GLORIOUS.

"We were most highly blest in having JESUS stand by us the last two nights—HE was seen by three in the audience on the last night—Mrs. Pinkerton was one who saw him.

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

And Mrs. Ferguson and I were seen to be encompassed in the Golden Light at the same time. We hope you saw it too."

* * * * * * *

"If and when Saint Germain desires us to go out on [490] this glorious BEARING OF THE LIGHT—we will quickly arrange to go.

"One mighty thing came forth one night after one present had tried to induce us to use some of the things he had received from an unknown source—The voice said—'We as Messengers OF THE LIGHT UNDER SAINT GERMAIN teach NOTHING BELOW THE ASCENSION—we are not interested in teachings BELOW THE ASCENSION—ONLY THOSE WHO HAVE MADE THE ASCENSION CAN TELL US HOW IT IS ACCOMPLISHED AND OUR TEACHERS, JESUS AND SAINT GERMAIN ARE NEVER DYING TEACHERS—THEY WILL NEVER FAIL US—THEY WILL NEVER DO ANYTHING THAT IS LESS THAN PERFECTION AND THEY WILL CONTINUE TO GIVE US TEACHING AS FAST AS WE CAN ASSIMILATE IT, AND THEY WILL KEEP GIVING US MORE AND MORE—WE NEED NOT LOOK ELSEWHERE FOR ALL THAT WE SHALL EVER NEED.

"One student blessed us for making him aware that Unveiled Mysteries is TEACHING

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

FROM ABOVE THE ASCENSION. He said 'I had never before realized that fact.'

* * * * * * *

"THE FERGUSONS,
Messengers of The Light."

This letter dated April 1, 1935, my husband wrote and we sent it to the Ballards.

I have no recollection that it was my husband and I who suggested that the students of the I Am be restricted to reading the literature of the I Am movement. As a matter of fact that students were told all along to confine their reading and their study to the I Am books.

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT "VV"

was received in evidence, being a letter dated February 9, 1935, from the Fergusons to the Ballards, reading as follows:

"Feb. 9, 1935
"Chicago

"Dear Blessed Ballards [491]
"Blessed Messengers of The LIGHT

"Your good letter received and we showed it to Mr. Stickle as you desired.

"He is coming out to see us today or tomorrow and he or we will write you after the blessed meeting.

* * * * * * *

"Also to tell you of the wonderful LIGHT

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

received yesterday on John 14-26. JESUS SPEAKING.

"'BUT THE COMFORTER (SAINT GERMAIN) which is THE HOLY BEING WHOM THE FATHER WILL SEND IN MY NAME', "I AM" HE SHALL TEACH YOU ALL THINGS, AND BRING ALL THINGS TO YOUR REMEMBRANCE, WHATSOEVER I HAVE SAID (TAUGHT) UNTO YOU.'

"John 16-13.

"'HOWBEIT WHEN HE (SAINT GERMAIN) THE SPIRIT (BEING) OF TRUTH, IS COME, HE WILL GUIDE YOU INTO ALL TRUTH: FOR HE SHALL NOT SPEAK OF HIMSELF (BY HIS OWN VOLITION) BUT WHATSOEVER HE SHALL HEAR, that SHALL HE SPEAK (TEACH) AND HE WILL SHOW YOU THINGS TO COME.' 'HE SHALL GLORIFY ME: FOR HE SHALL RECIEVE OF MINE, AND SHEW IT UNTO YOU.' SAINT GERMAIN IS IDENTIFIED BY THE WORD 'HE' AND THE TEACHINGS, HE IS GIVING.

"We are shown by this to urge the students to accept no teachings, writings, or suggestions coming from those BELOW THE ASCENSION—for only the ASCENDED BEINGS CAN TEACH US HOW TO ATTAIN THE

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

ASCENSION. THE ONE AND ONLY WAY.

"This came in response to an activity which was uncovered in the Ashville group in passing around so called messages recieved by some who have not awakened to the fact that THE ASCENDED MASTER TEACHINGS INCLUDE EVERY REAL STATEMENT OF TRUTH EVER UTTERED BY ANY ONE. [492] AND THESE MASTERS HAVE WOVEN ALL TRUTH INTO ONE SEAMLESS ROBE. Confusion arises when the student tries to do the weaving of utterances, given by those who have NOT MADE THEIR ASCENSION, into THESE GLORIOUS TEACHINGS.

"Oh Beloved MESSENGERS and TEACHERS, our joy and gratitude is boundless that we were chosen by THE ASCENDED MASTERS to come under THIS GLORIOUS LIGHT 'THE FATHER OF LIGHTS WITH WHOM THERE IS NO VARIABLENESS NOR SHADOW OF TURNING.'

* * * * * * *

"THE FERGUSONS

"Messengers of the LIGHT"

My husband wrote this letter and we sent it.

A letter dated May 7, 1935, to the Ballards was shown to the witness, the letter having at the bottom "By William". The witness said she didn't re-

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

Another letter dated May 16, 1935, was shown to the witness and the witness stated that she recalled receiving this letter from the Ballards.

Said letters were received in evidence as

DEFENDANTS' EXHIBIT "WW",

and read as follows:

"Tuesday, May 7, 1935

"Dear Blessed Messengers, The Ballards—

"We just want to share our joy in telling you of our class just closed Sunday evening—not large but of exceeding high worth.

"Two from Altoona, Pa. and three from Columbus, Ohio were all of one family—three of them Christian Science Practitioners—one of them outstanding and he had such a transcendent experience on the closing night.

"A shaft of light shone over us and we were surrounded with a golden light throughout the evening—this blessed [493] one was so shaken with the power that he could not hold himself quiet until a shaft of light shone directly toward him and at its end the Glorious Saint Germain—this was responded to by—'Speak Lord for thy servant heareth'—and the light ball at the end of the shaft just in front of him exploded and at once the greatest peace came over him. * * *"

* * * * * * *

"We are overjoyed with the reports of your

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

miraculous classes and experiences and we know this is *this is* the fulfillment of the scriptural statement—THE EARTH SHALL BE FILLED WITH THE GLORY OF THE LORD.' * * *

"Shortly after we recieved the MAJESTIC picture of JESUS THE CHRIST, we sent you an order for three of these pictures and a check for payment for those. Now we send you an order for SIX MORE and enclose check for 15.00.

"When Saint Germain desires that we go forth to other cities—we stand ready to do the will of THE MASTERS.

"Our love and blessings enfold you all in deepest gratitude that through you dear ones we were drawn into THE LIGHT."

"The Messengers of LIGHT
"THE FERGUSONS."

"By William".

"Richelieu Hotel
"San Francisco, Calif.
"May 16,-35

"The Fergusons
"Blessed Messengers of Light:

"Your blessed letter of the 7th recieved with check [494] enclosed for $15.00. Miss Majerus will fill your order there in Chicago. We order

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

75 more before leaving L. A. and they should reach there shortly. These marvelous pictures are all hand colored by the artist himself, so they are almost equal to an oil painting.

'We do so deeply rejoice in the splendid work you blessed ones are doing, keep it up the Mighty 'I Am' and Saint Germain will cause you to do the perfect thing you should do at all times.

"How futile have been human vicious attempts to disturb or *interfer* with this work. How true, God, the Mighty 'I Am' Presence in us is our certain Victory."

* * * * * * *

"THE BALLARDS.
"Per. G. W. B."

After we left the Ballard movement my husband and I started "The Free and Independent Students of Truth." I don't think it was exactly a movement.

A circular, mimeographed on legal size paper, beginning: "You shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free," was shown to the witness, and she was asked whether or not she and her husband had had the paper mimeographed. The witness replied, "Yes", and then said she wanted to explain and answered, "No, that they didn't have it mimeographed; that they had nothing to do with circularizing it; that some of the student friends of theirs

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

sent it out but that they had got one; that they were not consulted before it was prepared, to her recollection, but that the Fergusons did furnish the letter of May 18, 1937, to such students. The friends who circulated the letters were the Rydalts in Detroit, a Miss Garrett, Mrs. Hackerson and Mrs. Crook.

The document was marked for identification as Government's Exhibit 210. [495]

A juror asked whether or not the witness had seen Saint Germain as was referred to in Defendants' Exhibit "WW", as having appeared to a student. The witness said she had never seen Saint Germain.

Redirect Examination

In the lectures that were given by Mr. Ferguson and myself, I read the discourses. He did most of the reading and whatever explanation or teaching was given; also, he described the chart. Mr. Ferguson never represented to the classes that he was receiving dictations from Saint Germain. I met Mr. Harry Sieber in November or December of 1934. I saw a copy of Government's Exhibit 87 in November or December of 1934, at least it was very similar. We received such announcements as Government's Exhibit 87 at the early meetings; also, some through the mails. We were told that we were to take all of our instructions from the Ballards, the accredited messengers. I believe every problem that ever came up we went to the Ballard's with. I don't remember any conversation with Mrs. Bal-

(Testimony of Jane Ferguson.)

lard wherein I directed to her what the students should or should not read. This woman, Mrs. Billheimer, referred to in respect to having been healed, had been suffering from a crooked finger. After a meeting her finger became straightened and she said her finger became straightened during Mr. Ferguson's prayer. I have never seen Jesus. I think Mr. Ferguson typed Defendants' Exhibit "TT"; I don't remember writing it. Most of our supplies came from the Saint Germain Press except for some pictures from the Sindelar Studios.

Thereupon, the Government read certain portions of depositions taken in 1940 from the divorce action of Donald and Marjorie Ballard, the depositions having been given by Mrs. Ballard and Donald Ballard. From the deposition of Mrs. Ballard, given on or about April 11, 1940, the following portions were read by Mr. Neukom: [496]

"Q. And when was he born? (Referring to Donald Ballard).

"A. May 12, 1918.

* * * * * *

"Q. Was he in any way connected with your original activities in the I AM?

"A. He was present at the dictations.

"Q. Where did the dictations take place?

"A. In our own home.

* * * * *

"Q. Then he was connected with your public

(Deposition of Mrs. G. W. Ballard.)

activities at their commencement in 1932, your meetings?

"A. No, he was in school at that time. He did not come on the platform with us until 1934.

"Q. 1934, he commenced appearing in public?

"A. Yes.

"Q. In connection with the activities?

"A. Yes.

* * * * *

"Q. Did Donald make the trips out of the state of California?

"A. Some, not all of them.

"Q. And when he accompanied you out of the state, he always participated in the lectures in other states?

"A. He did.

* * * * *

"Q. Well, do you know if he obtained funds from any source than from you?

"A. I do not, except an occasional love gift from an individual student at Christmas, Easter and his birthday.

"Q. During the time he was married, did he have a regular allowance?

"A. He did.

"Q. Who made the allowance to him?

"A. I did. Mr. Ballard and I, until Mr. Ballard's ascension.

* * * * *

(Deposition of Mrs. G. W. Ballard.)

"Q. Did the Saint Germain Press ever issue any checks to him?

"Q. You mean the corporation?

"Q. Yes.

"A. Yes, since it was incorporated, I have drawn his allowances from the Saint Germain Press. [497]

* * * * *

"Q. And did the Saint Germain Press, when it was a partnership, issue any checks to him?

"A. Yes.

"Q. It did?

"A. That was his allowance.

* * * * *

"Q. Has his participation changed any in it since G. W. Ballard's death?

"A. Why, yes.

"Q. In what way?

"A. Because he is on the platform and takes half of the lecture work with me, and before he only took a third.

"Q. He took a third of the class?

"A. About that.

* * * * *

"The Court: The following question is, 'Of lectures before?' Then the answer, 'I wouldn't say a third, he was there part of the time.

* * * * *

"Q. Well, do you receive money through the mail?

(Deposition of Mrs. G. W. Ballard.)

"A. For what?

* * * * *

"A. The Saint Germain Press does not so often, but the Saint Germain Foundation receives and I receive some money for healing.

"Q. When you are giving your lectures to the classes, Donald's name is used as one of the authorized messengers of Saint Germain?

"A. It has been.

"Q. Is it still?

"A. In the past, yes; and at present it is.

"Q. Hasn't it always been?

"A. Yes, I think so, as far as I recall. The first names that were used on the advertising were Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Ballard and son Donald.

* * * * *

"Q. In the past have you set any particular sum of money per month which you paid Donald?

"A. His allowance, you mean?

"Q. Yes, his allowance.

"A. Yes.

"Q. What was that sum?

"A. $500.

"Q. And how was that sum to be used?

"A. He paid the rent and his household expenses out of it, and their living expenses.

[498]

"Q. And how long have you given him that sum of money?

(Deposition of Mrs. G. W. Ballard.)

"A. Ever since he was married.

Will it be stipulated that Donald Ballard married Marjorie Ballard in December of 1936?

* * * * *

Mr. Peterson: So stipulated.

Thereupon Mr. Neukom read from a deposition given by Donald Ballard in the same action on May 6, 1940:

"Q. During 1937, 1938 and 1939, were you engaged in any occupation other than the I AM activities, for money?

"A. No.

"Q. Since December 22, 1936, have you actively participated in the I AM activities?

"A. I have.

"Q. Had you done so prior to that time?

"A. Yes.

"Q. Have you yourself had any experience with the Ascended Master Saint Germain?

"A. No, I have not.

* * * * *

"Q. Have you referred to yourself as one of the Accredited Messengers of the Ascended Master Saint Germain?

"A. Yes.

* * * * *

"A. I spoke to the young people in similar manner to that which Mr. and Mrs. Ballard spoke to the older people.

* * * * *

(Deposition of Donald Ballard.)

"Q. Were you in charge of the young people's meetings?

"A. Some of them, yes.

* * * * *

"Q. At the present time are you actively engaged in the I AM activities?

"A. Yes, I am.

"Q. Now, in the magazine called, 'The Voice,' is that published in connection with the I AM activities?

"A. It is.

"Q. You yourself write articles for that magazine, do you not?

"A. I have in the past." [499]

Exception No. 79

The Government moved to limit the application of letters in Exhibit 203 (the so-called Mount Shasta letters) to the defendant, Mrs. Ballard, for the reason that the books were not published then, that is, in 1930; nor had there been any meeting in Chicago prior to that time.

Objection to such limitation was made upon the ground that the allegations of the indictment as to when the conspiracy began was in 1930, and on the further ground that the documents were already in evidence and had been read to the jury as against all defendants, and the error that was committed could not be cured by limitation at this time.

The motion of the Government was granted and

exception allowed to the defendant, and the jury instructed that the Exhibit will pertain only to the defendant, Edna Ballard.

Thereupon, the Government rested.

Thereupon, the Court dismissed "Count I", so far as it applied to the check for $20.00, dated December 20, 1938, payable to Mrs. G. W. Ballard from Muriel L. Bliss. The remaining portion of the "Count" to stand, however, as repeated in the other Counts. [500]

Upon the Court's own motion, that portion of Count 1 reading as follows:

> "That the defendants, on or about December 20, 1938, then having devised the said scheme and artifice, for the purpose of executing the same and attempting so to do, at Los Angeles, County of Los Angeles, state, division and district aforesaid, and within the jurisdiction of the United States and of this Honorable Court, unlawfully and feloniously did knowingly cause to be delivered by mail according to the directions thereon, a certain check in a postpaid envelope addressed to Mrs. G. W. Ballard, at Los Angeles, California, which said check had theretofore been deposited in the Post Office Establishment of the United States for mailing and delivery, and which said check was thereafter delivered to said addressee by the Post Office Establishment of the United States at such address, and within the Central Division of the Southern District of California, and

within the jurisdiction of the United States and of this Honorable Court, and which said check was of the following tenor, to wit:"

"And it is marked as Government's Exhibit 115, Chicago, December 20, 1938, drawn on the Uptown State Bank, Uptown Bank Building, pay to the order of Mrs. G. W. Ballard, $20, and in type, $20, signed Muriel L. Bliss. The endorsement is of Mrs. G. W. Ballard and G. W. Ballard."

was stricken with the understanding that the other portions of said Count 1 which are by reference referred to in the other Counts were to remain. [501]

Exception No. 80

Thereupon, pursuant to stipulation of the parties that each motion be deemed to be made as to each defendant and as to each and every count without the necessity of repetition, defendants moved to strike out the following oral and documentary evidence, to wit:

(1) Exhibit 69.

Grounds: That the exhibit constitutes no proof of scheme to defraud and contains no fraudulent misrepresentations.

(2) Exhibit 70.

Grounds: That there was no proof of any scheme, or of any fraud, and that the letter constitutes purely a private transaction between Mr. Ballard and Mr. Sieber, not connected in any way with the scheme.

(3) Testimony of Harry Sieber that after the receipt of Exhibit 68 by him expenses were taken out of the receipts of love gifts and the balance divided fifty-fifty.

Grounds: That the financial affairs do not prove any scheme; is immaterial and is in no way connected with the scheme to defraud.

(4) Exhibit 74.

That it has not been connected with any scheme; no showing anyone acted in reliance thereon and no disproof of any of the statements contained therein.

(5) Exhibit 72.

Grounds: That the letter had not been connected with any scheme to defraud; it contains no fraudulent representations; no disproof of any nature as to the existence of ascended masters.

(6) Testimony of Harry Sieber to the effect that Mr. Sieber had never seen Saint Germain.

Grounds: Immaterial; negative evidence. No founda- [502] tion that he was present at all times when Saint Germain appeared; no showing that the appearance of Saint Germain constituted any part or portion of any scheme.

(7) Testimony of Harry Sieber to the effect that he saw Mrs. Ballard working on a manuscript which she stated to be the manuscript of the "Magic Presence".

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected up. No showing work was original or any more than cor-

rection of typographical errors. That it sought to impose upon the jury a course of conduct of piling inference upon inference.

(8) Exhibit 78.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(9) Exhibit 79.

Grounds: Immaterial and not having been connected with any scheme.

(10) Exhibit 80.

Grounds: Immaterial and requiring jury to pile inference upon inference.

(11) Exhibit 82.

Grounds: Immaterial and not connected with any scheme to defraud.

(12) Testimony of Harry Sieber relative to contents of circular letter (Exhibit 87).

Grounds: Not best evidence. No foundation laid.

(13) Exhibit 83.

Grounds: Immaterial and failure to connect with any scheme to defraud.

(14) Exhibit 88.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(15) Exhibit 92.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme to defraud. No showing anyone acted thereon. [503]

(16) Exhibit 93.

Grounds: Speculative and conjectural; calls on jury to speculate as to existence of ascended masters and their abilities.

(17) Exhibit 94.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation and conjecture as to experiences with ascended masters and contrary to instruction heretofore given to the jury.

(18) Testimony of Mr. Gysi wherein he states that manuscript which he said was "'Magic Presence" that Mrs. Ballard had with her always.

Grounds: Conclusion; no foundation.

(19) From Exhibit 4, page XI, pertaining to the statement that the experiences were actual experiences with Saint Germain.

Grounds: Calls for speculation, conjecture of jury.

(20) Exhibit 96.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of jury as to verity of experience of Mr. Sindelar.

(21) Exhibit 97.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of jury as to verity of experience of Mr. Sindelar.

(22) Exhibit 98.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with scheme to defraud.

(23) That portion of Exhibit 12, April 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 4, "The colors of red and black are never, never, never used by an ascended master."

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for conjecture as to existence and conduct of ascended masters.

(24) Reference to colors contained in "The Voice" [504] magazine, August 1937 issue, page 18, Government's Exhibit 28.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for conjecture as to existence and conduct of ascended masters.

(25) Exhibit 100.

Grounds: Immaterial; private communication not connected with scheme to defraud; no showing anyone relied thereon.

(26) Testimony of Mr. Gysi, "We did not receive any instructions from Saint Germain not to have the class."

Ground: Conclusion; no showing Ballards had no such communication.

(27) Exhibit 101.

Ground: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(28) Testimony of Mr. Gysi relative to division of receipts.

Grounds: Immaterial and particularly failing to show net after deduction of expenses.

(29) Exhibit 103.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(30) Testimony of Harry Rogers, "I did not see Mrs. Ballard do anything", in reference to telegrams that had come in.

Grounds: Negative testimony; no foundation; no showing she might not have done something without presence of witness.

(31) Exhibit 108.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(32) Exhibit 109.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters; contrary to instructions of the court; im- [505] material.

(33) Testimony of Margaret Schall to the effect that Mrs. Ballard said that if one followed the teachings in the books, naturally one would be able to heal.

Grounds: Immaterial and incompetent, and no disproof of ability of teachers to accomplish results.

(34). Portion of Exhibit 29, September 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 21, relating to statement that Saint Germain had done certain things.

Grounds: No disproof, and calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(35) From Exhibit 8, pages 86 and 87, "The words are flashed before the physical eyes of this good messenger."

Grounds: No disproof of fact and calls for speculation and conjecture.

(36) From Exhibit 48, April 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 14, pertaining to dictations coming through Ray of Light.

Grounds: No disproof of fact and calls on jury to speculate as to existence of Saint Germain and belief of defendants therein.

(37) Testimony of Margaret Schall to the effect Mrs. Ballard stated ascended masters would take over coming golden age.

Grounds: No disproof of this revelation of future event; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(38) Portion of Exhibit 50, July 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 15, relating to Los Angeles, New York and Washington being oversupplied with the "love".

Grounds: Immaterial.

(39) Testimony of Margaret Schall to the effect that at different classes she gave certain money.

Grounds: No materiality. [506]

(40) That portion of Exhibit 5, pages 118 and 119, relating to the subject matter of precipitation.

Grounds: Not connected with any scheme laid in indictment; calls for speculation.

(41) Testimony of Mrs. Schall wherein she states "Mrs. Ballard also said that 'if you want money, jewels an automobile, or whatever you want, ask your "I Am" Presence to get it.'"

Grounds: Immaterial and shows no representation of personal power on part of defendants.

(42) Part of Exhibit 89 pertaining to experiences of David Lloyd with ascended masters.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters and verity of experiences had with ascended masters.

(43) Statement of Margaret Schall "From statements made to me, I believed I would be able to precipitate all of the objects I desired."

Grounds: Conclusion; no foundation laid.

(44) Statement of Margaret Schall, "It was those representations that caused me to buy the books and to contribute love gifts."

Grounds: Uncertain and ambiguous.

(45) Statement of Margaret Schall to the effect that the Ballards stated experiences in "Unveiled Mysteries" and the "Magic Presence" were true experiences.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of existence and belief in existence of ascended masters.

(46) From Exhibit 10, the February 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, pages 7 and 8, reference to dictation of Jesus the Christ.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of jury as to [507] verity of existence of Jesus and experiences of defendants with Him.

(47) Statement of Margaret Schall that the Ballards stated ascended masters made visual, visible, tangible appearance.

Grounds: Calls for speculation and conjecture as to verity of Ballards' experiences with ascended masters.

(48) Portion of Exhibit 104, Group Leader Letter of December 17, 1937, which recites experiences had with ascended masters, including Jesus.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of existence and experiences with ascended masters.

(49) Testimony of Mrs. Schall to effect she heard the subject matter of cataclysms mentioned

by the Ballards and pertaining to gas belts.

Grounds: Immaterial. No showing part of any scheme and calls for speculation as to verity of opinions of the Ballards.

(50) From Exhibit 29, September 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 3, wherein ascended master expresses gratitude to student body.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to existence of and experiences with ascended masters.

(51) Testimony of Mrs. Schall, "I heard both Mr. and Mrs. Ballard talk about black magicians."

Grounds: Immaterial. No part of any scheme. Calls for speculation as to verity of and experiences with these powers.

(52) From Exhibit 8, page 139, reference to black magicians.

Grounds: No disproof as to recitals; not connected with any scheme; calls for speculation.

(53) From Government's Exhibit 55, November 1939 issue [508] of "The Voice" magazine, relating to Ascended Master Jesus' Discourse on healing.

Grounds: No disproof; calls for speculation.

(54) From Exhibit 47, March 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, pages 6 and 7, relating to trip to India and matters of healing.

Grounds: No disproof; calls for speculation.

(55) Testimony of Mrs. Schall, "I did not observe any healings being made by the messengers' call."

Grounds: Negative testimony and no disproof of any actual healing.

(56) Testimony of Mrs. Schall to the effect Mr. Ballard told her of woman with cancer in throat.

Grounds: No disproof; calls for speculation.

(57) Testimony of Mrs. Schall and reference in Exhibit 104, January 1938 issue of "The Voice" Magazine, relative to kidnapping of Donald and Marjorie.

Grounds: Not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(58) From Exhibit 56, December 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, referring to use and autographing of books of Saint Germain Series.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any alleged scheme laid in indictment.

(59) From Exhibit 62, June 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 11, referring to "doubting".

Grounds: Immaterial.

(60) Testimony of Mrs. Schall relative to discourses of ascended master David Lloyd on compassion and sympathy.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(61) Testimony of Mrs. Schall to effect she heard Mrs. [509] Ballard say "Organized charities were not proceeding in right way."

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme alleged in the indictment.

(62) From Exhibit 18, October 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 22, reference to black magicians.

Grounds: Immaterial; speculation as to existence or experiences with these powers.

(63) That portion of Exhibit 110 referring to Ballards' wanting people to be present at meeting and do certain work.

Grounds: Immaterial; private communication; no misrepresentation; no showing of any alleged scheme.

(64) Testimony of Mrs. Meyer that Mr. Rogers stated that there were three telegrams he didn't want to answer.

Grounds: Conclusion.

(65) Testimony of Mrs. Meyer to effect Mrs. Ballard had no time to give to a certain woman.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with scheme laid in indictment.

(66) Portion of Exhibit 89, at page 18, "Unveiled Mysteries", relating to statements made by one of the ascended masters.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of existence of and experiences with ascended masters.

(67) From Exhibit 89, page 29, relating to experiences of Mr. Ballard with Saint Germain.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of existence of and experiences with ascended masters.

(68) Reading from letter (no exhibit) reciting that Mrs. Bliss appointed messenger purportedly typed "Saint Germain".

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(69) Personal letter signed "Saint Germain" in

typing addressed to Mrs. Bliss, dated September 28, 1934 (not an exhibit) [510] pertaining to personal admonitions to Mrs. Bliss.

Grounds: Calls for conjecture as to existence of ascended masters and belief of defendants therein.

(70) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss, "I was told that ascension could take place while you were still a living physical being."

Grounds: No disproof calls for jury to speculate as to verity of future event.

(71) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss that Ballards referred to ascension of Jesus.

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(72) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss the Ballards said that people who were going in the United States would ascend from the Royal Teton Mountains.

Grounds: Calls for conjecture as to verity of religious belief.

(73) From Exhibit 17, September 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 20, pertaining to message from one of ascended masters.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of and belief in existence of ascended masters.

(74) The reading from Exhibit 58, February 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine page 32.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of and belief in existence of ascended masters.

(75) From Exhibit 46, February 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 19, relative to message from ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of and belief in existence of ascended masters.

(76) From Exhibit 52, October 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine at pages 32 and 33, referring to Saint Germain's explanation of new dispensation. [511]

Grounds: Calls for speculation and conjecture of jury on verity of existence and experiences with ascended masters.

(77) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss, "I have heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard comment upon their ability to heal people."

Grounds: Conclusion of the witness. Irrelevant.

(78) From Exhibit 54, October 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, to effect no dictations conflicting.

Grounds: Immaterial; no part of scheme laid in indictment; calls for speculation.

(79) From Exhibit 32, December 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 8, being a statement of ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for jury to speculate as to existence of ascended masters and as to verity of prayers of people for certain results.

(80) From Exhibit 48, April 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 7, dictation from Saint Germain.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of and experiences with ascended masters.

(81) Testimony of Dr. Cottam relative to inviting Mr. Ballard to make trip with him.

Grounds: Immaterial; no part of scheme laid in indictment; calls for speculation.

(82) Exhibit 119 (Killen letters).

Grounds: Too remote; immaterial; no part of scheme laid in indictment; no showing Miss Killen or any other person acted thereon.

(83) Exhibit 120.

Grounds: No disproof of matters discussed therein; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment; calls for speculation.

(84) Exhibit 121. [512]

Grounds: Immaterial.

(85) From Exhibit 29, September 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 3, pertaining to messengers being in city and assistance they might give.

Grounds: Ambiguous; speculative.

(86) From Exhibit 39, July 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 11, referring to statement of ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for speculation. Immaterial.

(87) From Exhibit 42, page 8, relating to experiences with ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of events and existence of ascended masters.

(88) From Exhibit 42, "The Voice" magazine, page 23, pertaining to whether or not people could receive certain things.

Grounds: Calls for speculation relative to existence and powers of ascended masters.

(89) From Exhibit 53, September 1939 issue of

"The Voice" magazine, pertaining to wisdom of messengers being supreme.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(90) From Exhibit 33, January 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 3, relating to devastation.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

(91) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss relative to believing statements pertaining to cataclysm.

Grounds: Statement merely opinion; no disproof; calls for speculation.

(92) Exhibit 122.

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(93) Exhibit 123 referring to appearance of Jesus and painting of picture and presence of Ballards in Park. [513]

Grounds: No disproof; calls for speculation.

(94) From Exhibit 55, November 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 8, being a discussion by ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for speculation of verity of existence of and belief in ascended masters.

(95) From "Magic Presence", p. 363 and 364, experiences of Mr. Ballard with ascended masters.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to experiences of Mr. Ballard with ascended masters.

(96) From editor's note in same book, "Magic Presence".

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to existence of and belief in ascended masters.

(97) From Exhibit 47, page 7, discourses relative to healing.

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(98) From Exhibit 10, February 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, pertaining to statement of ascended masters.

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(99) Statement of Mrs. Bliss that she had never seen messengers heal anyone.

Grounds: Negative testimony. Immaterial.

(100) Exhibit 126.

Grounds: Calls for speculation and conjecture.

(101) From Exhibit 6, page 177, "If you could see what was going on, you would be surprised."

Grounds: Immaterial.

(102) Testimony of Mrs. Bliss relative to Mr. Ballard's statement in Wyoming that he felt too ill to proceed with trip.

Grounds: Immaterial and not connected with any scheme to defraud.

(103) From Exhibit 89, pages 111 et seq., pertaining to experiences of ascended masters. [514]

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of ascended masters.

(104) From Exhibit 39, July 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, pages 35 and 36, relating to music of witness Mrs. LaFerrera.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof of statements, and not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(105) From Exhibit 43, November 1938 issue of

"The Voice" magazine, page 48, relating to new songs.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof of statements, and not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(106) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera "I recall no conversation with Mr. Ballard about their having any healing power. There was no such conversation."

Grounds: Incompetent; immaterial.

(107) From Exhibit 49, May 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 50, referring to music.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(108) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera that Mr. Ballard told her while she was playing a song that the Goddess of Light had appeared to him.

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(109) Testimony of Mrs. La Ferrera, "I saw no Goddess of Light, nor did Mr. Ballard make any comment upon it."

Grounds: Negative testimony; immaterial.

(110) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera relative to Mr. Stickell stating that he didn't believe all the San Francisco love gifts had been given to him.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(111) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera relative to conduct of staff meeting. [515]

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(112) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera, "I never

saw Saint Germain or the Divine Director during these meetings."

Grounds: Calls for speculation.

(113) From Exhibit 11, March 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 16, relating to Royal Tetons and council chamber.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(114) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera that while she was at Royal Tetons she didn't go down two thousand feet.

Grounds: Immaterial; negative testimony.

(115) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera that she was told by Mr. Ballard to reply to any questions as to whether she had seen Saint Germain that she was not permitted to discuss it.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with scheme laid in indictment.

(116) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera relative to statements about dismissals from staff and as to what would happen to dismissed staff members.

Grounds: Immaterial; no charge of any threat or violence in indictment; calls for speculation.

(117) Testimony of Mrs. LaFerrera and reading from Exhibit 54, October 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, referring to K-17.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; no disproof; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(118) From Exhibit 54, October 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine referring to G-men and intelligence service.

Grounds: Immaterial and speculative.

(119) From dictations of August 17, Government's Exhibit 129, referring to necessity of staff members keeping harmony.

Grounds: Immaterial; private communication; not [516] connected with any scheme laid in indictment, and calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(120) Exhibit 130.

Grounds: Immaterial; pertains to no scheme laid in indictment.

(121) Testimony of Mrs. Hill relative to cataclysms in Chicago and to conversation with Miss Majerus pertaining to keeping money out of bank.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with scheme laid in indictment.

(122) From "Unveiled Mysteries", page 10, relative to books of the Saint Germain series bound in covers of jewels.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with the scheme laid in indictment.

(123) Testimony of Mrs. Hill relating a conversation with Mrs. Ballard relative to "Prince of the House of David."

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(124) From Exhibit 32, December, 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 3, relative to Jesus' Discourse pertaining to ascension.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof and not within any of the issues of indictment.

(125) Testimony of Mrs. Hill relating to Mrs. Ballard commenting about the entities around the women in the reading room with a shopping bag.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(126) Testimony of Mrs. Hill relating to black magicians.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment. [517]

(127) From Exhibit 45, January 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 9, relating to black magicians.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(128) Exhibit 132.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(129) Letter from Brother Bill, dated May 20, 1937 (no Exhibit number), said letter relating to Denver as having plenty to crack.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment:

(130) Testimony of Mrs. Hill to the effect she heard Mr. Cassiere give decrees on cataclysms.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation of jury, and does not contain representation as to a present or past event.

(131) Exhibit 133.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(132) Exhibit 4, page 45, referring to experiences of the author.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(133) From Exhibit 135, letter of July 23, 1936, particularly the portion relating to Mrs. Ballard doing work on manuscript.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(134) From Exhibit 135, particularly from letter of August 8, 1935, referring to Mrs. Mundy's aunt in San Diego and shipping of certain books. [518]

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(135) Testimony of Mrs. Hill that Mr. Stickell told her he had seen Saint Germain.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(136) Exhibit 138.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(137) Testimony of Pat Crouse relating to form letters.

Grounds: Immaterial and constitutes no proof of scheme to defraud.

(138) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to another book of forms.

Grounds: Immaterial and constitutes no proof of scheme to defraud.

(139) Exhibits 136 and 137.

Grounds: Immaterial and constitutes no proof of scheme to defraud.

(140) Testimony of Mr. Crouse to the effect Mrs. Ballard told him no acknowledgment should be made of love gifts.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(141) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relative to changing forms of Exhibits 136 and 137.

Grounds: Immaterial; no proof of any scheme as laid in indictment.

(142) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to amounts of money retained ($1500).

Grounds: Immaterial.

(143) Exhibit 105.

Grounds: Too remote, since it refers to times earlier than 1929; immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment. [519]

(144) Exhibit 104; and testimony of Mr. Crouse relating to ascension of Mr. Kelly.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof and no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(145) From Exhibit 59, March 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 41, referring to ascension and pictures of students.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(146) From Exhibit 59, March 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 34, relating to Mr. Ballard's ascension in Honolulu.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; no disproof.

(147) From Exhibit 57, January 1941 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 26, referring to ascension of Mr. Ballard in 1939.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; no disproof.

(148) From Exhibit 57, January 1941 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 28, referring to dispensations.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; no disproof.

(149) From Exhibit 4 (the Magic Presence), page 390, referring to experiences with Saint Germain.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters.

(150) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to Jesus' Morning Discourse and changing of certain words written down by Mrs. Mundy.

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusions of witness.

(151) Exhibit 141.

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusions of witness.

(152) Testimony of Mr. Crouse to the effect Mrs. Mundy told him she took down discourses as given.

Grounds: Immaterial. [520]

(153) From Exhibit 8 (Ascended Master Light), referring to speed of dictations.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(154) From Exhibit 6, page IX, relating to dictations appearing in words of light.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

(155) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relating to ascended masfer Ray O Light.

Grounds: Calls for a speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(156) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relating to Goddess of Liberty.

Grounds: Calls for speculation on verity of existence of ascended masters.

(157) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to financial reports (Exhibit 142).

Grounds: Immaterial; no foundation, having failed to show net income; no connection with any scheme to defraud.

(158) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relative to conversation about going to cities throughout the United States.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(159) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relative to dictation instructing messengers not to go where expenses could not be made.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

(160) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to statement of Mrs. Mundy relative to difficulties of keeping accounting records.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(161) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to memos that [521] were made (Government's Exhibit 143).

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme to defraud.

(162) Exhibit 145.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(163) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to comments of the Ballards about appearance of ascended masters in their classes, but that the witness had never seen one.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; negative testimony; immaterial.

(164) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relating to failure of ascended masters to appear and that they were told failure was due to a lack of harmony.

Grounds: Immaterial and no disproof.

(165) Testimony of Mr. Crouse referring to statement made by Mr. Cassiere about amount of love gifts at various cities.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(166) Testimony of Mr. Crouse relating statements by Mr. Stickell pertaining to amount of love gifts.

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusion; no foundation.

(167) Testimony of Mr. Crouse to the effect he heard Mrs. Ballard state about curing people of cancer, and that he had never heard any people say to the Ballards that they were cured of cancer.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; negative testimony.

(168) Exhibit 104, pertaining to x-rays taken of student claiming to have been cured.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; immaterial.

(169) Testimony of Mr. Crouse to the effect he had [522] never heard anyone say they had been cured of cancer.

Grounds: Immaterial; negative testimony.

(170) From Exhibit 58, page 35, announcement referring to pictures of Mr. Ballard.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(171) From Exhibit 55, page 12, November 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, to the effect that messengers had performed unparalleled healings and were under no obligation to continue their work.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation upon the appearance and existence of ascended masters.

(172) From Exhibit 62, August 1939 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 25, to the effect that "You hear little of it, but you must have observed the work of the messengers."

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation upon existence of ascended masters; no disproof.

(173) Testimony of Mr. Crouse pertaining to conversation with Donald Ballard as to whether Jesus had put his arms about Mrs. Ballard.

Grounds: Conclusions; calls for speculation as to existence and verity of events.

(174) Testimony of Madge King to the effect that Mr. Ballard stated that a man who was going to the radio station was killed when his car overturned.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof; calls for speculatjon.

(175) Testimony of Madge King wherein she recited that Mr. Ballard gave a discourse at the meeting.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof thereof; calls for speculation.

(176) Testimony of Madge King wherein she referred to [523] Mr. Ballard's statement in his dictation about a disaster in South America and in which she says Mr. Ballard said "I won't say that it will happen in New York."

Grounds: Immaterial.

(177) Testimony of Madge King in which she recited Mr. Ballard told about airplanes coming from Europe.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof; calls for speculation.

(178) Testimony of Madge King to the effect that Mr. Ballard's voice, when he started dictation, was deep and then changed, and that he didn't indicate when the dictation finished and he started.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

(179) Exhibit 149.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(180) Testimony of Evelyn M. Brown that she had been given money by Inspector Van Meter to purchase record.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any alleged scheme laid in indictment.

(181) That portion of Exhibit 64, August 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 39, relative to the new record being of a blue material, and relative to cost thereof.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme to defraud as alleged in the indictment.

(182) Testimony of Portia Terry relative to receiving a call from the Ballards to go to their apartment regarding Saint Germain's call for the marriage of Donald and Marjorie.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme alleged in the indictment.

(183) Testimony of Portia Terry relative to Donald struggling at a meeting and stating thereafter that he wouldn't take a back seat to the Rogers, and that the organization was a [524] fake.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with allegations laid in indictment.

(184) Testimony of Mrs. Terry relative to staff meeting in Oakland wherein Donald started to defend himself orally.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any alleged scheme laid in indictment.

(185) Testimony of Mrs. Terry to the effect Mrs. Ballard had stated that Jesus had held her in his arms, and that Donald had said his mother had never seen an ascended master.

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusion; hearsay; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(186) From that portion of Exhibit 30, October 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 3, wherein it is stated that Saint Germain had referred to Donald as his "pal."

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any alleged scheme in indictment; calls for speculation as to ascended masters.

(187) From Exhibit 29, September 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 23, wherein it is recited that the Ballards had stood in the presence of the Ascended Master Saint Germain.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to ascended masters.

(188) Exhibit 151.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme to defraud.

(189) From Exhibit 29, September 1937 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 9, dictation to the effect that Donald would receive things by merely asking for them and that Donald and Marjorie would do much for the young people of America.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

[525]

(190) From Exhibit 15, July 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 10, wherein it is recited that one could as easily find $10,000 in his pocket as 10¢.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme as alleged in indictment.

(191) Exhibit 152.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(192) Exhibit 153.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected in any way with scheme alleged in indictment.

(193) Exhibit 154.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(194) Exhibit 155.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme alleged in indictment.

(195) Testimony of Mrs. Terry to the effect that Mr. Ballard treated her by running his hands up and down her spine, and that Mrs. Ballard did, by giving decrees.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme alleged in indictment.

(196) Exhibit 75.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme alleged in indictment.

(197) Testimony of Mrs. Terry to the effect, "I don't know how much Donald received over and above his regular allowance."

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusion.

(198) Testimony of Eloise Pinkerton to the effect that when she was fourteen or fifteen years of age, Donald said, "How much longer are those people going to swallow that stuff."

Grounds: Immaterial; no foundation; calls for speculation as to subject matter of conversation.

[526]

(199). Testimony of Helen Pinkerton to the effect that two books coming off the press related to Mr. Ballard's experiences, and that Mrs. Ballard had said discourses were given at their home and that Mr. Ballard had said the experiences with the panther are true.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of these experiences.

(200) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton in which

she recited how many sets of books and subscriptions to "The Voice" magazine her family had.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(201) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton to the effect that she did not allow anyone else to touch her books.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with scheme alleged in indictment.

(202) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton relative to conversation with Miss Majerus regarding precipitated pictures at the Ballard home.

Grounds: Immaterial; hearsay; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences.

(203) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton to the effect that Miss Majerus stated that the Ballards would receive ray of light while sitting at their table.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of experiences.

(204) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton relative to tidal waves and cataclysms in the future.

Grounds: Immaterial and no disproof of representation relative to a present or past fact.

(205) Testimony of Helen Pinkerton relative to amounts of money she had given.

Grounds: Immaterial. [527]

(206) Testimony of Mrs. Pinkerton about her clashing with Mrs. Ballard and Mrs. Ballard's comments relative to tobacco entities, and to the effect that she should remove her children from her husband.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(207) Testimony of Mrs. Pinkerton relative to conversation she had with Mrs. Ballard about ascension in which she said "I did not care to risk it."

Grounds: Immaterial and not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(208) Testimony of Merton Casterline to the effect Mr. Cassiere had said "You make an ascension in the physical body," and that "People perfected themselves through use of the violet flame."

Grounds: No disproof thereof; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences and to future ascensions.

(209) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that a woman said at one of Mr. Cassiere's classes, to give liberally, because you receive only as you give.

Grounds: No foundation laid; hearsay; no connection with any scheme alleged in indictment.

(210) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that Mr. Cassiere said he returned to Cleveland because his pockets were empty.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(211) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that Mr. Cassiere had said there would be an earthquake.

Grounds: No representation of present or past event, merely an opinion; immaterial.

(212) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that [528] Mr. Cassiere had said the experiences of Mr. Ballard related in "Unveiled Mysteries" and "The Magic Presence" were true.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of such experiences.

(213) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that the sales of books amounted to $700.

Grounds: Immaterial; conclusion.

(214) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that Mrs. Ballard had said there would be an earthquake and spoke about gas belts.

Grounds: Immaterial; no representation as to present or past event; calls for speculation.

(215) Testimony of Mr. Casterline to the effect that Mr. Cassiere had said Saint Germain had come to him.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of experiences.

(216) Testimony of Ernest Ricord to the effect that Mrs. Ballard had said that eventually everyone would make an ascension.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of experiences and as to future events.

(217) Testimony of Ernest Ricord relative to Kelly's ascension.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of ascensions and existence of ascended masters.

(218) Testimony of Ernest Ricord to the effect he understood Mr. Ballard was a messenger, and

from Exhibit 42, October 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 23, to the effect that messengers knew what was going on so could not be deceived.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences and existence of ascended masters.

(219) Testimony of Ted Dahl to the effect that he had [529] handled $190,000 in radio broadcasts.

Grounds: Immaterial; uncertain and ambiguous.

(220) Testimony of Mr. Dahl to the effect that neither he nor Mr. MacGregor had said there was any healing power in the records.

Grounds: Immaterial; negative testimony.

(221) Exhibit 158.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(222) Exhibit 159.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(223) Exhibit 163.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(224) Exhibit 164.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any allegations in the indictment.

(225) Exhibit 165.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(226) Exhibit 166.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(227) Exhibit 167.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(228) Exhibit 168.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(229) Exhibit 171.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation.

(230) Exhibit 176.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(231) Exhibit 177.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any [530] scheme laid in indictment.

(232) Reading from Exhibit 58, "The Voice" magazine, page 50, relative to pictures of Mr. Ballard being requested by students.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(233) Exhibit 178.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(234) Exhibit 179.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(235) Exhibit 180.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences.

(236) Testimony of Dr. W. Curtis Brigham to the effect that Exhibit 140 is a photograph of Mr. Kelly whom he had treated as a patient.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation relative to ascension.

(237) Testimony of Richard Louis Bronwell that "Louise Majerus was in charge so far as I know."

Grounds: Conclusion; no foundation laid.

(238) Testimony of George Thomas Stevens in which he related that Mr. Ballard had stated in effect, that a young couple who had purchased a home would be better off had they not done so because a cataclysm was imminent.

Grounds: Immaterial; no representation of present or past event.

(239) Testimony of George Thomas Stevens to the effect that Mrs. Ballard stated if students would train themselves to perfection they could make calls for precipitation. [531]

Grounds: Immaterial; no representation as to present or past event; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(240) Testimony of Catherine Rogers to the effect Mr. Ballard had said that Mr. Livingston had not done so well relative to money coming in.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(241) Testimony of Catherine Rogers relative to amount that had been contributed to the activity.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(242) Testimony of Catherine Rogers that Mrs. Ballard said "I want you to remember I am in full charge of the publications.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(243) Testimony of Catherine Rogers to the effect Mrs. Mundy stated in taxicab she wished that

they (the Ballards) would not go ahead with the books.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(244) Testimony of Catherine Rogers to the effect that Mr. Ballard stated to her in Seattle that Mrs. Ballard had no human passions and was perfect.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(245) Testimony of Catherine Rogers to the effect Mrs. Ballard rebuked Mr. Ballard for sending out letters to students without her knowledge, and the reply of Mr. Ballard, "Well, I will quit if you want me to."

Grounds: Immaterial.

(246) Testimony of Catherine Rogers to the effect that after the witness left a staff dictation meeting crying, Donald stated, "I am for you Catherine, I know how you feel, because my mother is the meanest woman on earth." [532]

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(247) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers to the effect Donald Ballard stated (referring to women students), "I wish those students would keep away."

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation that reference was as to activities of defendants.

(248) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers relative to incident of Donald Ballard drinking soda pop.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to whether Donald was paying attention to what was going on.

(249) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers to the effect Mr. Ballard stated at Glacier National Park that witness' voice had a healing quality and would be heard all over the world.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with allegations in indictment.

(250) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers to the effect Mr. Ballard had told her she would lose her body in six weeks if she left the activity, and relating to conversation of witness with Mrs. Ballard relative thereto.

Grounds: Not within the issues of the case; not connected with participation in scheme alleged in indictment.

(251) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers to the effect that in a dictation in Dallas, Texas, it had been stated that if two members left the activity, they would be left in abject poverty.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(252) Testimony of Mrs. Rogers to the effect Mr. Ballard said "Our income was sufficient last year to enable us to retire on the sale of our books."

Grounds: Immaterial.

(253) Exhibit 182. [533]

Grounds: Immaterial.

(254) Exhibit 183.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(255) Testimony of Dottie D. Fowler to the effect Mr. Ballard stated Saint Germain was authority on this planet, and spoke to her about ascension

and about his experiences in the Royal Tetons, and that he spoke of cataclysms and precipitations.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of events.

(256) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect that Mr. Ballard stated Saint Germain had given them no information about the lettering above the published picture of Saint Germain.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(257) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler relative to conversation with Mrs. Mundy relative to responsibility for broadcasts in Seattle.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(258) Exhibit 185.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(259) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler relative to Mrs. Ballard having referred from the platform to precipitated jewels of light, a glass of water and a toothpick.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(260) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler that Mrs. Ballard said "We are not ordinary human beings."

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment. [534]

(261) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler relative to dismissal of Catherine Rogers and Virginia LaFerrera.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(262) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect Mrs. Ballard stated that they had 3 million students.

Grounds: Immaterial; an effort to give the impression activity was opposed to Government.

(263) Exhibit 188.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(264) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect Mr. Cassiere said the Ballards wanted the decrees read phrase by phrase so that more decree books would be sold.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(265) That portion of Exhibit 186 relating to how decrees should be given.

Grounds: Immaterial; no proof of any fraud or participation in any scheme alleged in indictment.

(266) Exhibit 187.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme nor representation.

(267) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect Mrs. Ballard stated that Saint Germain knew what money went into the gift boxes.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to wisdom or knowledge of ascended masters; not connected with any scheme to defraud.

(268) Exhibit 192.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(269) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect Mr. [535] Cassiere said there was a special radiation

from autographing books because he was an ascended master.

Grounds: Calls for speculation; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment; no disproof thereof.

(270) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler in which she stated while describing a conversation relative to defense fund "Well, it seems they all hinge on that. If anything happened to her (Mrs. Ballard) the whole planet would go down."

Grounds: Conclusion of the witness; immaterial; voluntary statement.

(271) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect Mr. Stickell said that he would dissolve poisonous black flies that were in his foox.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any allegation in indictment.

(272) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler that Mr. Stickell told her about his struggle to prevent sinister forces from poisoning his food.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(273) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler that she believed Mr. Stickell's statements relative to the dissolving of poisonous flies from his food.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any allegations in indictment.

(274) Exhibit 193.

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof of the accuracy of the statements contained; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(275) Exhibit 194.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any [536] scheme laid in indictment.

(276) From Exhibit 197, November 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 4, relative to a dictation about the feeling world and that the master would some time come forth in his visible, tangible body, that people should continue with the good work and that they should decree for the financial aid needed to carry on.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(277) From Exhibit 197, November 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine, reference to black magicians.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment; calls for conjecture upon existence of beings in any other world.

(278) That portion of the September 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine read, and referring to one of the masters rendering a service to Southern California by protecting it.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; no disproof; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(279) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler that Mr. Ballard stated "Two days and two nights later we emerged from the eternal flame wearing our new bodies of immortal endurance. The inharmony of earth cannot register within these permanently." (From "The Magic Presence")

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences of Mr. Ballard with ascended masters.

(280) Reading from Exhibit NN relating to Easter Sunday services in which the picture of Mr. Ballard was exhibited.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment. [537]

(281) Reading from Exhibit HH to the effect that Seattle students were "decreeing" the return of the Ballards to Seattle.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to efficacy of decree or prayer.

(282) Reading from Exhibit LL to the effect that Mrs. Fowler wrote that it was wonderful that she, Mrs. Fowler, had been mentioned by the Goddess of Light.

Grounds: Immaterial; hearsay.

(283) Testimony of Mrs. Fowler to the effect that the Goddess of Light had referred to her at the class in Oakland.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(284) Reading from Exhibit II in which letter Mrs. Fowler stated that she had been to Dr. Kirk's estate and in which reference is made to Mr. Kirk meeting Mrs. Ballard and shaking hands with her.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment; hearsay.

(285) From Exhibit GG in which Mrs. Fowler

in a letter to Mrs. Ballard, states that Brother Bill had told her, Mrs. Fowler, that people in the South thought she, Mrs. Fowler, had the big head because she had been mentioned by the ascended masters.

Grounds: Immaterial; hearsay; not connected with any scheme to defraud.

(286) Reading from Exhibit FF, a letter by Mrs. Fowler to Mrs. Ballard about starting groups in homes, about people calling her after hearing radio broadcasts and thinking she, Mrs. Fowler, was Mrs. Ballard.

Grounds: Immaterial; hearsay and not connected [538] with any scheme laid in indictment.

(The September 1940 issue of "The Voice" magazine was received in evidence as Defendants' Exhibit XX.)

(287) Exhibits 201 and 202, for the reason that the two exhibits are not connected one to the other, and it is sought by said two exhibits to draw inference upon inference to the effect that Mr. Sindelar used Exhibit 202 to draw Exhibit 201.

(288) That portion of Exhibit 91 describing or announcing "Unveiled Mysteries."

Grounds: Immaterial.

(289) Exhibit 203.

Grounds: Said documents (Shasta letters) were procured in violation of the constitutional rights of the defendants, that the protection of said documents at the former trial was necessitated in order to meet accusations in the former trial that Mr. Ballard had not been at Mount Shasta, that to use

such documents at this present trial when the Government admits that Mr. Ballard was at Mount Shasta amounts to the use of evidence procured by duress, the Government having photostated said exhibit from the exhibits of the last trial; that the statements made therein as disclosed by said document were not voluntary, that in effect it violates the guarantee of the Constitution against unlawful search and seizure.

(290) Testimony of Jane Ferguson to the effect that she had a conversation with Mrs. Ballard while Mrs. Ballard was working on a manuscript of "The Magic Presence."

Grounds: Immaterial; ambiguous; uncertain; calls for speculation as to whether original work or typographical corrections was being done on manuscript.

(291) Exhibit 204. [539]

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(292) Exhibit 205.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(293) Exhibit 206.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(294) Testimony of Mrs. Ferguson to the effect that Mrs. Ballard referred to a cataclysm.

Grounds: No disproof and was but an opinion as

to a future event and did not refer to a present or past event.

(295) Exhibit 207.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(296) Exhibit 208.

Grounds: Immaterial; contains no representations and not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(297) Exhibit 209.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of existence of masters and not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(298) That portion of Exhibit 43, November 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, at page 19, stating, "Mr. G. W. Ballard has never done a dishonest or dishonorable thing in his entire life and never will."

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(299) Exhibit 87. [540]

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(300) Reading from Exhibit SS, "Dear Blessed Ballards: Complying with Saint Germain's instruction, we are coming to you for solution of problems in this field."

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation upon the verity of existence of masters and not connected with any alleged scheme.

(301) Reading from Exhibit SS, referring to a glorious day in the Senate.

Grounds: Immaterial; hearsay; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(302) Reference read from Exhibit 209, relative to Mr. Ballard instructing Mr. Ferguson to keep books on a cash basis.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any alleged scheme.

(303) Testimony of Mrs. Ferguson that she had never seen Jesus.

Grounds: Immaterial; negative testimony.

(304) Reading from Exhibit WW, letter from Mr. Ferguson to the Ballards referring to receiving picture of Jesus and ordering more.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme alleged in indictment.

(305) Letter of May 16, 1935 (reply to Exhibit WW).

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(306) The portions of the depositions of Mrs. Ballard and Donald Ballard given in Donald Ballard's divorce action relative to Donald receiving funds from any source other than from Mrs. Ballard, and relative to the source of money given [541] to Donald for his support, and relative to money being received through the mail; also, relative to Saint Germain's Press and Mrs. Ballard receiving some money for healing; relative to the use of Donald's name in connection with the use of the activity as an authorized messenger; relative to Donald engaging in any other occupation than the

I Am activity, and as to whether Donald had any experiences with Saint Germain, to which he replied that he had not.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to existence of ascended masters; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment, and that fulfillment and satisfaction of legal obligation to support minor cannot directly or indirectly be accepted as evidence of participation in or of any fraud.

(307) Reading of the foreword of "The Magic Presence" at page 11, relative to the experiences in "Unveiled Mysteries" and "The Magic Presence" being real.

Grounds: Calls for speculation as to verity of existence of ascended masters.

(308) Reading from "Ascended Master Discourses" to the effect that dictations came in words of living light.

Grounds: No disproof and calls for speculation.

(309) Readings from Saint Germain's discourses (from "Ascended Master Discourses").

Grounds: Immaterial; no disproof; no connection with allegations in indictment.

(310) From "Ascended Master Discourses" referring to dictation to do good to mankind and further referring to the ascended masters.

Grounds: No disproof; calls for speculation as to verity of the facts stated.

(311) From reading of "Unveiled Mysteries," page 244, [542] relating to experiences of Mr. Ballard with ascended masters.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation as to verity of experiences.

(312) Testimony of Mrs. Hall relative to being taught about the violet consuming flame and not to eat garlic or onions.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation and no disproof of the teachings.

(313) Reading from Exhibit 18, October 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine, page 12, relative to ascensions.

Grounds: No disproof; calls for conjecture.

(314) From Exhibit 41, September 1938 issue of "The Voice" magazine, referring to dictation of ascended master relative to conditions in Los Angeles and benefits believed coming to Los Angeles.

Grounds: Immaterial; calls for speculation; no disproof of any statement contained therein.

(315) Testimony of Mrs. Hill relative to length of time people stayed in reading rooms.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(316) Testimony of Wilbur Curtis Smith to the effect he got pineapple juice and cough drops for Mrs. Ballard when she had a cold.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(317) Testimony of Mr. Smith to the effect Mrs. Ballard asked him to see the Miami police as they at one time had almost been arrested.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(318) Testimony of Mr. Smith to the effect that to take up collections they, the Ballards, would require a license costing $500. [543]

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(319) Testimony of Mr. Smith to the effect he put $500 into the activity for copying of photograph and selling it.

Grounds: Immaterial; not connected with any scheme laid in indictment.

(320) Testimony of Mr. Smith that one night Mrs. Ballard could talk scarcely above a whisper and took cough drops.

Grounds: Conclusion; calls for speculation; immaterial.

(321) Testimony of Mr. Smith relative to driving Donald to show and conversation with Donald.

Grounds: Immaterial.

(322) All reference to black magicians, K-17, sex or family relationships.

Grounds: Immaterial; no connection with any scheme laid in indictment.

(323) Each and every of said motions as to each and all of the defendants were denied and exceptions allowed.

The Court instructed the jury as to certain testimony stricken as follows:

> "Gentlemen of the jury, we have now reached the point where the defendants will present the issues in their own defense, their attorneys, the Government having rested its case and the Government having placed before the jury all of its testimony for your consideration.
>
> There was certain testimony that was intro-

duced that in the opinion of the Court should be disregarded by the jury. It is the opinion of the Court that the particular evidence that I am referring to had no direct connection and did not tend to prove any of the representations, statements, and allegations of the indictment. Therefore, I instruct the jury to disregard all testimony that was introduced that had any [544] political reference of any kind, to disregard all testimony with reference to statements allegedly to have been made with reference to insurance or the withdrawal of bank deposits or savings accounts in banks. All of those matters should be disregarded entirely by the jury.

The jury should also disregard, and I instruct you to disregard, the incident stated here by Mr. Smith of Florida with reference to his experiences with Saint Germain. You will recall that he stated at a meeting he arose and when he got the attention of those present and while the defendants, Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, were present—and my recollection is Donald was present—that he insisted on telling about an experience that he had with Saint Germain in which he requested precipitation of an automobile, a house, and a wife. You will remember something like that. That in the opinion of the Court should not be considered by the jury, and I instruct you to disregard it. It is the opinion of the Court that that particu-

lar testimony was not given in good faith by the witness. My recollection is that he was just stating that to those present without believing it.

I also instruct the jury to disregard certain testimony here with reference to the dismissal of Mary Ketcham who was an employee of the I Am organization and a certain telegram that was read in connection with that discharge. That was a matter of internal discipline in an organization. There is nothing in the indictment that that could possibly refer to and I ask the jury to disregard it.

There was also some testimony that when Mrs. Ballard went to San Francisco that she wore certain jewelry, certain adornment of her person, and certain reference was made to her clothing. It is the opinion of the Court that those matters are not pertinent to the issues before the jury and do not [545] sustain any of the representations or allegations in the indictment. I instruct the jury to disregard the references to that testimony.

Further in Mr. Smith's testimony, he made some statement with reference to locking up the door of the meeting place in Florida, that he padlocked it and also made a sign or a statement on the door in which the name Saint Germain was used. I am going to ask you to disregard all of that testimony. In the opinion of the Court it has no bearing on the issues of the case.

This is the proper time to instruct you on these matters and ask you to disregard them, because as other testimony comes in and as jurymen might be expecting a refutation of some particular testimony, some evidence to be met, it will not be necessary to carry in your minds any of the references that I have now called to your attention. This is a usual proceeding at the end of the Government's case, gentlemen. When a witness starts to answer a question it is very difficult to know what is going to be said. It is difficult for attorneys on either side to know what the whole answer is going to contain. Therefore, it is proper to make a motion to strike at the conclusion of the Government's case.

Another situation that may arise with certain testimony the Government feels it is necessary to present, but it can only be presented in piecemeal. In other words, one witness knows one thing, another witness knows another, and another witness knows another. So testimony is permitted on the theory that later that particular testimony will be made pertinent and will be material to the issues. I just make that statement because I think the jury are entitled to know why the Court strikes out certain testimony or why the Court makes certain rulings. It is better procedure." [545A]

Exception No. 80A

Motion to dismiss in behalf of each and every defendant on the grounds and reasons assigned in connection with dismissal made at the outset of the case and by way of demurrer to indictment, and made in connection with ensuing motion for directed verdict was made, and motion denied and exception allowed.

Exception No. 80B

Motion for instructed verdict of acquittal in behalf of defendant Edna W. Ballard on the grounds that insufficient evidence had been adduced to support a verdict of guilty, and on the grounds that all evidence was just as consistent with the hypothesis of innocence as with the hypothesis of guilt was made and denied. Exception allowed.

Exception No. 80C

Motion for instructed verdict of acquittal in behalf of defendant Donald Ballard on the grounds that insufficient evidence had been adduced to support a verdict of guilty, and on the grounds that all evidence was just as consistent with the hypothesis of innocence as with the hypothesis of guilt was made and denied. Exception allowed. [545B]

ALFRED J. ZIMMERMAN

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I am an accountant employed by the Philco Corporation and have been so employed since 1934 after being honorably released from the United States Naval forces in 1919, when I entered the practice of public accounting. I remained in public accounting practice until my connection with the Philco Corporation.

I have seen Mrs. Ballard on the platform and I am a follower of the I Am teachings. I first came in contact with them in the early part of 1934. We took definite steps towards acceptance at the Detroit class in 1936. I came in contact with the work by reading "Unveiled Mysteries", it being loaned to us by a friend. We attended the Detroit class and all the classes in Philadelphia and probably three or four classes in Washington and three or four in New York City. My wife is also a follower of the teachings. I am living with my wife and we have one child, a boy 15½ years old, who is also a student of the teachings. I have never at any Ballard class which I attended heard the Ballards or anyone on the platform solicit money or anything of value from anyone. I never heard the Ballards nor anyone on the platform at any class I attended make any statement concerning the sale of books other than to announce that the books were sold. I never heard the Ballards or anyone on the platform urge anyone to buy books. I never heard

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

them solicit anyone to purchase jewelry, charts, phonograph records, radio transcriptions, songs, or any other commercial products. I never heard any statements concerning cataclysms at any classes except in a general way, nothing specific. No one on the platform ever set a definite date for a cataclysm. The statement concerning the method by which healing could be brought about was that it was only through our own obedience to the laws of life as given forth in the books and our own application and harmony. That was to be brought into play by [546] obedience to the laws. We were told to apply the laws. The Mighty I Am Presence does the healing. I never heard the Ballards, nor anyone on the platform, make the statement that they could personally heal people. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3179.) The statements were made that they would give their assistance through their own calls and to the Mighty I Am Presence. After they made such calls, if we would maintain our own obedience and harmony in our feeling world, and the manifestation could take place, the healing would take place, provided we made our own call, too. We had to pour forth our own energy to bring forth the healing that was desired. We were told we would have to make our own call to our own Mighty I Am Presence in order to accomplish this result. Neither the Ballards nor anyone on the platform ever stated that the jewels which they possessed had any healing quality.

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

I never heard the Ballards nor anyone on the platform state that the entire physical body was to ascend in the ascensions. Only the finer and purified substance of the body would do so. The statements which I heard made concerning precipitation were in the way of explaining what precipitation means, in that, rain, for instance, is a precipitated form. It can be in varying degrees of acceptance, according to our own application. The statement as to the channels through which precipitation occurred was that they occurred through normal channels that we know of in ordianry life. Again it was brought into play through our own application by our own calls to the Mighty I Am Presence, obedience and harmony in our worlds was required. In order to make our application, we must put forth our own energy through our own Mighty I Am Presence in our calls we were taught. I heard from the platform many times the statement; "Do not believe us, prove us". I am still a follower of the activity.

Concerning the benefits which I am receiving or have received from my participation in the activity, there is no doubt [547] about it that in living the laws and applying the laws as much as we can, there has been much greater harmony and peace of mind in our entire household, in my work, and in all business associations and affiliations, wherever they may have been. Our health has been much better, all three of us, the entire household, and there are untold blessings that have come to us through our

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

own application as we know how to apply it. Concerning my own physical condition, I feel that every organ in my body is functioning more completely. My sight is much better than it was 10 or 15 years ago. I use glasses at home, not very often, usually laying them aside, but I do use glasses mostly for long distance, street. I used them for reading before I took up this work.

I have never heard a statement from the platform that Guy W. Ballard, or Donald Ballard, or Edna W. Ballard attained a supernatural state of self-immortality which enabled them or either of them to conquer disease, death, old age, poverty or misery.

Cross Examination

The glasses I now wear are bifocal lens. I can read with them if I care to. I have a very nice position with the Philco organization. I have been rather a studious student of the movement, going from class to class. I have read almost all of their magazines since I have been with it. I have bought three sets of the books, one for myself, one for my wife, and one for my son. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3187.) We each read our own.

I have heard the Ballards speak of a new dispensation. My understanding is that there is practically no difference between the two, except that what remains under the new dispensation is cremated, where under the old dispensation what was left, the residue, was consumed by light rays

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

directed or projected by ascended masters. I have read the Beloved Jesus' Discourse at the Washington class of November 30, 1939, a part of Government's Exhibit 57, reading "Under the old dispensation the individual had [548] to purify and illumine the atomic structure of the physical body and raise it out of the atmosphere of the earth." I read Discourse No. 10 of the I Am Discourses about precipitation of gold. I am a student, sir, not an ascended master, and have not put a practical usage to that discourse. That is the stage when one graduates from the work that we are doing now to attain that perfection. I was taught that when I became an ascended master I could precipitate gold. While an ascended master I would not necessarily be spending most of my time in the orbits. I could be living here on earth, yes, lower the vibratory action in my body. Then I would be able to precipitate gold or anything else that I wanted, automobiles if I wished them, as an ascended master, not as an individual, as a human. Beloved Ariel is one of the ascended masters. I have read and heard the statements that "these messengers make no mistakes", and "Do not believe us, prove us". The messengers do not claim to know everything and that you cannot deceive them. They say "Prove us".

I have read the following portion of Government's Exhibit 42 at page 23:

"Individuals have tried sometimes to see

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

how much they could deceive the Messengers, believing that the Messengers did not know everything that we going on.

"Look upon these two forms tonight, they seem and are very humble, very natural; but they are so far beyond what these human forms seem to Out-picture, that you would be greatly surprised. Because they are firm enough and strong enough to hold obedience to the Light and hold the students who do not want to give obedience in line. Do not criticise them. They are the authority in This Work, and shall remain so. Remember that."

The messengers never made any representations that they themselves did the actual healing. It was through their calls. [549]

I read the Master Jesus' Discourse, Exhibit 48, page 7, in "The Voice" magazine, reading as follows:

"There is only one thing I did innumerable times which the Messengers have not called forth and that is the raising of the so-called dead. They have performed every other service of healing that I ever did in My Ministry."

I read the following portion of Government's Exhibit 42, at page 8, stating:

"You beloved ones in this vicinity, one day will know what these Precious Messengers have meant to you and humanity. One day you shall know who they are. You do not know yet.

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

> "I know, and one day you will when you really awaken and realize the service they are rendering humanity. These poor unfortunate bedraggled individuals who criticise them, what a reaping. One day, too late, they will see what mistake and then be unable to find their way home."

No definite time was ever stated as to a cataclysm. We were not taught that the I Am students would necessarily be saved from a cataclysm. We are being taught how to protect ourselves from whatever comes before us from which we need protection. My testimony is that the Ballards could help me or assist in calling to the Mighty I Am Presence in connection with healing, but that I must also make my call.

I have read from Exhibit 10, the February 1936 issue of "The Voice" as follows:

> "Cyclopea in directing the mighty currents of energy through the All-Seeing-Eye, and the call of the many students of the 'I AM', drawing the walls of light around America, have rendered tremendous service, in that it has prevented a tidal wave striking the western coast, [550] which was thought would have come into action the second of January, 1936."

January second is a specific date, but the messengers did not mention it. It was in the book that they put out but that is Saint Germain's discourse.

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

I never heard Saint Germain talk. The words came through Mr. Ballard. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3204.)

It was my goal to make my ascension in this embodiment and I was told by the Ballards, and understood from the readings, that if I followed the teachings it would be possible. I have read "Unveiled Mysteries", both editions. I have read the address in the front, that the two books are a record of the author's experiences and the order in which they occurred. I was told that the first two books were Mr. Ballard's actual experiences, except for the laws, for instance, on page 101 on visualization. Those are Saint Germain's words and not Mr. Ballard's words. The experiences related were Mr. Ballard's experiences where the words are unquoted in the book. I believe now and believed then, the foreword in "The Magic Presence", reading as follows:

> "The retreats, people, and instruments I saw and associated with, while with the Ascended Masters, are real physical places and things, and tangible, living, breathing Beings. They were not imaginary nor symbolic and are not to be interpreted in any such way."

I believed that Mr. Ballard had all the experiences related in "The Magic Presence" and "Unveiled Mysteries" and the time and places related therein. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3207.)

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

Redirect Examination

Examining a copy of "The Voice" for 1940, Government's Exhibit 57 again, I also read the following from it:

> "You cannot and no one ever did or ever will make the ascension except from the purified substance of [551] physical bodies."

After the statement read by Mr. Neukom, as follows,

> "There has been lurking in many the idea that one may make the Ascension after so-called death; but that cannot be accomplished because the call for the Ascension must be made to the 'I AM Presence' and the Ascended Masters from within the physical side of Life. You cannot do it otherwise, no one ever did in the world,",

I recall reading the following:

> "When the Lifestream is severed, withdrawn, from your heart and body, it finishes that form. The substance disintegrates and goes back into the Universal from which it came."

I arrived at the state of consciousness where I believed the passages of the books by acceptance within. So far as my feelings were concerned, there was no question, no question as to its validity. I didn't start believing immediately upon reading it. The condition of belief resulted through study and

(Testimony of Alfred J. Zimmerman.)

meditation on the subject. The work in the activity, including all the laws that are taught in the books and magazines, cleared the way, cleared the air, so to speak, of what had been taught in church and other associations. This clarified my stand.

Recross Examination

There was an old and new dispensation with respect to ascension. I am not prepared to answer when the new one was announced. I am not prepared to say whether the mention in the February 1937 issue of "The Voice", Government's Exhibit 22, referred to the new or the old. The Divine Consuming Flame is used now and whether it was in the old dispensation or not is irrelevant to the question what it is now. It makes little difference, so long as I know the laws that lead to the ultimate accomplishment. I didn't understand that the body itself was going [552] to ascend by reading the following from Government's Exhibit 22, February 1937 issue of "The Voice", at page 3:

> "Every one, who has ever accomplished the Ascension, Jesus included, had to use this Violet Consuming Flame to dissolve his own human creation, before the Substance of his flesh body could vibrate at a rate that would enable it to ascend."

As I stated previously, only the finer substances ascended and not the dross or the material form.

WALTER A. HALDY

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I am a physician and surgeon and live in Cleveland, Ohio. I am a member of the American Medical Association, and have been practicing for 35 years. I was educated in this country for the medical profession and also studied in Europe in Vienna and Berlin.

I have been a follower of the I Am movement since March 13, 1939. I came in contact with the movement while I was down at the Cleveland Public Library and asked the librarian for some books. She brought me about an armful of books and laid them down before me on a table and I saw a book there called "Unveiled Mysteries" and the title sort of intrigued me and I took it out and read it, and from that time on I kept reading it. I didn't contact the movement until sometime later. I took the book home and read it and became very much interested in it. I wouldn't have become interested in it if somebody else had handed it to me for the very reason, from the human factor that men try to teach us something. I don't take it. The fact I got it myself, I was very much able to take it myself. In fact, I might say patients of mine have handed me various pieces of literature and I usually put them in one overcoat pocket and forget it, but when this happened, I just happened to take it and it clicked. I didn't [553] know there was a Ballard group at all. I liked this book, so much, I sent to Chicago

(Testimony of Walter A. Haldy.)

for a copy for my own use and with that book came a little brochure that told about classes and gave me information that I could contact in the city. I looked it up in the telephone book and there wasn't any telephone number or any such thing, so I called up the chief operator and I finally got in touch with their movement. I contacted their class in Cleveland. I have attended a great portion of classes since my contact with this work in various cities, including Chicago, Los Angeles, New York, Washington, Philadelphia, Cleveland and Boston. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3212.)

I have absolutely not heard any solicitation nor urging made for the purchase of books at any of the classes. There wasn't anything said at the public appearances concerning the purchase of books. That was left to your own volition. The statements concerning healing were that the process of healing was one that was done by your own application, and I remember very distinctly most of those classes, that Mr. Ballard brought out the point that the healing was done through his own presence and he had nothing to do with it himself. Mr. Ballard produced his healings through his own presence. He always told us that he himself personally had nothing to do with those healings; that is, this presence that produced these healings. As far as my statements concerning healing in my own self, I would have to make application to that presence and by application I could heal myself. I could call the presence of Mr.

(Testimony of Walter A. Haldy.)

Ballard. It was said that we could by the call and our own application in time, if we purified our substance of our body, of our emotional bodies and attained such a state of prefection there, precipitate ourselves. We could precipitate food or practically everything that you want, but you would have to have a state of perfection in your feeling and emotional body. To describe the effect this [554] movement has had upon me, I would say, in the language of the street, if I saw myself coming down the street, I wouldn't know myself. It has produced a great feeling of peace, and it has produced a great feeling of inward strength. Of course, that is a matter of relative statement, but it has produced a great feeling of inner strength which, of course, you cannot transmit to a man. You have got to feel that yourself. This changed my entire attitude toward my fellowman. I have a feeling of greater good will towards my fellowman. There has been a change in my attitude as to my own security and well being here and hereafter.

Cross Examination

I still endeavor to heal people by the ordinary means of medicine, not just the same as I did before March 13, 1939. I do it more intelligently. I would use a knife in case adenoids needed to be removed. Sure, why not? I would put a broken arm in splints. Why not? I haven't been in practice for at least three years, but I am going into practice. I am still

(Testimony of Walter A. Haldy.)

endeavoring to achieve the perfection which is required for precipitation. I believe that if I would obtain it, I would be able to precipitate, not myself, but through my presence. There is a subtle distinction there between yourself—I mean between yourself and your presence. You must always bear in mind that you can't do anything yourself. You are human, but you can, your presence can, do everything. Get that subtle distinction between the two. My presence could precipitate a physical object. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3217.) My presence is an ethereal, something that doesn't need to eat food and can precipitate tangible things for me.

Mr. Neukom read from Government's Exhibit 56, at page 10.

ELSA CHAMBERLAIN

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I reside at Madison, Wisconsin and I am a follower of the [555] "I Am" activity. I first heard of the activity in 1936. I didn't really accept it until I heard Mr. Stickell the second time, later on in 1936. I have been a follower since that time and I still am. I am in charge of the sanctuary at Madison and have been since June 15, 1941. I have been a group leader since approximately 1937. I have a small business of my own. I could have other work but I chose this purposely because I could give more

(Testimony of Elsa Chamberlain.)

time to it. I supply furniture polish to a clientele I have. I have attended three classes that Daddy held in Chicago and two weekends in Minnesota, then the last time that Mommy was in Chicago. The first one was in October of 1938, the next one about April of 1939, then the latter part of 1939, that was Daddy's. I attended a class in Los Angeles. At none of the classes that I attended, did I ever hear the Ballards or anyone on the platform solicit money or anything of value from any one. At none of the classes that I ever attended, did I ever hear the Ballards or anyone on the platform urge anyone to buy books, nor did I hear anyone solicit anyone to purchase jewelry, charts, phonograph records, radio transcriptions, songs, or any other commercial products. I didn't hear any statements concerning cataclysms. Statements concerning healing were to always call to your Mighty I Am Presence first, call to your presence for what it was that you wanted, but you must make the definite effort, you must put forth the application; and there was the statement made, too, that if you wanted help, you could call to the higher mental body of either Mommy or Daddy. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3236.) By "Mommy" and "Daddy", we referred to Mrs. and Mr. Ballard. I never heard the Ballards nor anyone on the platform make the statement that they could personally heal people, that they had personally healed people, nor that jewelry which they possessed had any healing qualities. I never heard any teachings that heal-

(Testimony of Elsa Chamberlain.)

ing was limited to some physical disability such as a broken [556] finger or a disease. You could have a healing in finances or some discord removed from your body. Fits of temper could be healed. It wasn't just merely some physical ailment, but extended to the mental or spiritual side as well.

I never heard the Ballards or anyone on the platform state that the entire physical body was to ascend. It was always the finer substances that ascended. In explaining the chart, they explained that the finer substance of the physical body was what was taken up into the ascension.

The first class I attended was in Chicago. I didn't leave any love gift at the class and I was not treated any differently than anybody else. It never occurred to me at any of the classes that there was any difference in the way anybody was treated with regard to their apparent financial condition or their apparent social condition. As to the benefits I derived from my participation in the activity, the very first thing that I noticed was that it took away from me the feeling of futility. I didn't feel as though I had to struggle and fight with people in order to really exist, and after that was gone, I noticed that I had a better feeling toward people and I became less and less having fits of temper. So I have much more of a feeling of peace and love and friendliness toward people.

Cross Examination

I went to Chicago for the express purpose of visiting the class. That was after I had some of the

(Testimony of Elsa Chamberlain.)

books. I was a group leader at that time. The first time I became acquainted with the movement was when I heard Paul Stickell in 1936 in Madison. I don't remember whether I bought any books at the first meeting. I did buy some books at the second meeting conducted by him. I don't know whether I contributed any love gifts at either meeting. I don't remember. I have all the books. I have autographed copies, one autographed by Mr. Ballard; the rest are autographed by [557] Paul Stickell. I have heard many discourses during the classes I have attended. I subscribe to "The Voice" magazine and I recall references being made in it to the necessity of studying the books of the Saint Germain Press. I purchased the books as soon as I was able to. I also purchased the charts and pictures and song sheets and a decree book. It is a loose-leaf book, and from time to time, I purchased decrees for that book. I think there are about 400 decrees, counting each side of the sheet. I conducted a class in Madison. We have nine active members and we give decrees at the group. We all read the decrees in unison, each reading from his decree book, unless we have memorized the decree.

The higher mental body of Mommy and Daddy Ballard is the selective discriminating intelligence. It is the body that stands between the physical and the higher mental body. It knows the imperfection of the human and also the perfection of the human. When you call to your Presence for something, the

(Testimony of Elsa Chamberlain.)

higher mental body reaches into the Presence and draws what you need and brings it into your world, if you are harmonized enough so that you can accept it. I called on the higher mental bodies of Mr. and Mrs. Ballard, because I believed that they could help me. I had more faith in their higher mental body than I did in my own which is, of course, wrong. I believed absolutely everything they taught me with reference to this work. I was never a member of the staff of the Ballards and I haven't been associated with them from the very inception of this movement. I know nothing regarding the writing of these books of the Saint Germain Press series from my own personal knowledge, nor of the business activities of the Ballards. The healing was for the healing of any discord. We were taught that by applying this law and applying these teachings, that we could in fact alleviate or help any condition relating to our own personal self that we wanted to help, and I believed that. [558]

Redirect Examination

I still believe the things I was taught and read. About 31 heard Mr. Stickell when he held the second class.

Recross Examination

I think Mr. Stickell had two classes a day for 7 days. The number who attended stayed about the same.

JAMES J. CAHILL

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I live in Seattle. I am in the shipbuilding business and have been for quite a number of years. I became interested in the I Am activity in 1936 in Seattle. The occasion of my finding out something about it was my attending a lecture conducted by Mr. and Mrs. Ballard. I did not purchase books or have access to them at that particular time, but did later. I studied and read the different books. I am a group leader in the activity in Seattle and have been for a little over a year. We have two groups there. Mrs. Sayre is the other group leader. After becoming interested in the activity, I met a lady by th name of Mrs. Fowler. She was one of the ladies who had one of the classes there. I assisted her at first. I waited at the door and put out the students that she thought undesirable and did one thing or another to help. There were students that she didn't like. I had a conversation with her later about her wanting to get out of the activity in one of the meeting rooms in Seattle in 1939. She said she wanted to get out of the activity and start an activity of her own. She said she wanted me to go in with her, free and clear of the Ballards.

I have in the neighborhood of a hundred in my group. They are in two separate sanctuaries. Books are kept there. No charge is made of students who may wish to read the books. They are free to the public or anyone who wishes to come in. We have

(Testimony of James J. Cahill.)

meetings every day and every night in the week. We do not request [559] any contributions or love gifts from the students and I have never asked for a dime. I have never heard Mr. or Mrs. Ballard nor any of the defendants ever ask anyone for anything. I have never received any instructions to do so myself. At meetings that I conducted myself or have attended where the defendants or group leaders attended, I have never heard anyone urge others to buy books. I have never heard them urge people to buy any other articles, pictures, or charts, or anything of that sort at all, including radio transcriptions, nothing at all. The meetings were conducted in an orderly and decent manner. I have never heard anything said about cataclysms at any of the meetings while Mr. and Mrs. Ballard were present or any other persons. There was singing at the meetings. We had songs and invocations and prayer (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3269.)

Mr. Stickell came to Seattle and attended the meetings and I have attended his classes. They were not conducted any differently from my own. The same thing was taught by him as I taught. I have never heard the Ballards say anything on the subject of healing at any of the meetings. I was never told they could heal people. I don't recall anything in particular from the platform in regard to precipitation and I didn't teach it nor make reference to it when I conducted my classes. In regard to ascension, it was not said that the actual

(Testimony of James J. Cahill.)

physical body would take off. I heard nothing of that sort.

The reason the people I had reference to were put out of the meeting was because Mrs. Fowler didn't want them in her group for personal reasons; not for any reason relating to the activity, but for personal reasons. There was no one I cared to put out. There wasn't anybody there creating any disturbance or anything of that sort, but there were people Mrs. Fowler did not want.

I heard Mr. and Mrs. Ballard state many times, "Don't believe us, prove us." I am still a follower of the activity. [560] The benefits which I have received have been numerous, physically, morally, spiritually, well, I think that covers a great deal.

Cross Examination

I am a group leader at the present time. My classes in Seattle are not open. One could not just come up to the door of a Seattle class and walk in now. I don't recall just how long the classes have been "closed" classes, but approximately two years or better. It was while Mrs. Fowler was still in the activity and since she left the work in Seattle, classes have continued to be closed in the same manner. I don't know the ultimate reason for closing the classes, other than to keep out undesirable people, I would say. Nobody told me to close them. I just followed in line with the regular activity. As a group leader, we give decrees at our meetings. We give them in unison. The books that we have in the read-

(Testimony of James J. Cahill.)

ing room are purchased from the Saint Germain Press, as are also the decree books. I have never been a member of the Ballard staff traveling around the country with them, nor have I been closely associated with the Ballards in any business enterprise. The lights, rent and such as that, connected with the maintenance of the reading room, are met by love gifts from the students.

Redirect Examination

I have never sent any money to the defendants. I ran my own class. By undesirable people, I meant those who might come in to cause trouble, profaners, or those who were not sincere.

Recross Examination

The class as a group has given money to the Ballard activity. I could not say as to individual members giving love gifts.

Redirect Examination

I don't make any financial reports to the Ballards.

[561]

THEODORE M. SEWARDS,

being called as a witness in behalf of the defendants, testified as follows:

I am from New York City. I came here purposely and gladly to testify in this case. I am a graduate in science, Ph.D. work in Columbia. I am in educational advisory work. I am on the staff at Columbia University. I was there for five and a half years as their adviser in education, vocational guidance work. I have also had some experience in the study of vibrations, color and light and so forth. I have been interested in vibrations as it affects music, having been married to a singer. For many years we were interested in Professor Hollick of Columbia University and some of the other scientists in the investigation of the effects of music on color and their co-relations. I am a follower of the I Am teachings and proud to be. I have been a follower for five or six years. I first came in contact with the movement through the I Am Discourses. It was a book given to my wife by a friend of hers. I read the book before attending any class or group and then attended the group meeting in charge of Ida Fisher in New York. I have never been a group leader, just a student. I never engaged in the selling of books or magazines or anything of that kind. I have never had any compensation out of the sales. I attended some of the meetings held by the Ballards in New York in the fall of 1936 or 1937, and some of the sessions of all classes held there since. I have attended classes conducted by Mr. Stickell.

(Testimony of Theodore M. Sewards.)

I believed what was taught in the classes, particularly anything I was able to prove. I tried to follow the instructions given in the books and in the classes. I think the effect upon me has been that it has made me a better man and gave me a better understanding of human nature, made me a better friend of humanity, and I prospered financially. I have made love gifts gladly. I have had very many experiences which have confirmed my [562] belief. I am happier; I understand human nature better; and am financially better fixed and get more joy out of life. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3286.)

I am married, but my wife is not a member of the movement. The fact has not caused any misunderstanding or trouble between myself and my wife. They taught us concerning healing that there is only source of life and if you make a complete contact with that life principle or source you will get perfection and perfection is healing. That was taught in the classes that I have attended.

Cross Examination

I believe the contents of "The Voice" magazine as they are. I believe that K-17 stopped the submarines from attacking the Panama Canal. I believe that the experiences related in "Unveiled Mysteries" were actually encountered by Mr. Ballard, that he encountered the Sahara Desert experience and the mysteries of the Yellowstone and the chapter about his experiences with the Incas. I should say that

(Testimony of Theodore M. Sewards.)

as far as I am personally concerned the things in the book appear and seem to be true and I believe that it is particularly true of these experiences that took place during August, September and October of 1930 at Mt. Shasta. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3294.) I believed everything Mr. Ballard said which was a discourse from Saint Germain or any of the ascended masters. I endeavored to follow the philosophy represented by the statement contained in Government's Exhibit 10, as follows:

> "I urge the students everywhere, with all the Love at my command, to forget everything else you have ever studied. Stand 100 per cent in and with your 'Mighty I Am Presence' and the 'I Am Discourses' by Saint Germain."

Redirect Examination

I have done a lot of analytical work. The question of proof is sometimes not always on the visible, in the visible plane, [563] and you can't always bring your proof down to visibility.

AGNES REGINA KELLY,

called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants, testified as follows:

I am employed by the Interstate Commerce Commission, at Washington, D. C., and have been so employed since 1921. I have been an I Am student

(Testimony of Agnes Regina Kelly.)

since the latter part of 1935. I contacted the movement through a friend who told me of the meetings being held in Washington, D. C. I attended three being held by Mr. and Mrs. Ballard. I bought the book "Unveiled Mysteries" during the meeting, which book I read. I have attended many classes since then. I have been out here eight times. I was in Dallas. I have never been employed by the movement in any capacity. I attended all, except three or four meetings of the class in Dallas. I attended the whole class in Kansas City. I attended portions of classes twice in Chicago, maybe about five days each. I attended all the classes in Washington, D. C., a portion of them in Philadelphia, and classes in New York and Detroit. The Ballards have been in charge of the meeting of all of the classes, except Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere have been in Washington, D. C. The matters discussed by Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere were in substance the same as at the Ballards' classes. They were from the I Am Discourses.

No one ever asked me to buy books or to give any love gifts. I have both bought books and made love gifts. I did so because I have gotten so many blessings from it and I bought the books because the first one gave me the law of life that I was looking for and after that I bought the rest of them because I wanted to continue to reach the goal that was given there and I needed the rest of the instructions. The application of the laws has done me

(Testimony of Agnes Regina Kelly.)

good. For one thing it explained life to me, what we were supposed to do, what we were here for, and how we were to attain this goal. It showed me the goal, what to do, and [564] how we were to attain this goal. It showed me the goal, what to do, and how to get there, and Mrs. Ballard always said, "Do not believe me, but prove me," so I proved it by applying the law as it was given in those books and as given in the instructions, and I am continuing in it to continue to that goal. I have never heard anything said at the meetings deleterious to my morals. Everything I have heard said was in upliftment, not only for the ones that attended them, but for all mankind. Everything that was given there was a blessing for mankind. They have taught us to bless life everywhere we move, to call blessings on everyone, and to be harmonious and be more kind to people and we do that wherever we can; we call those blessings.

Cross Examination

Mr. Neukom: You know on this subject of "Don't believe us, prove us," did it ever strike you as being strange that their books were full of the statements that "everything we have ever said is true"?

The Witness: Well, I proved the law by putting the law into—putting the law into action I proved the law was correct, that it would work just what they said it would do. Therefore, they were right about that. Why shouldn't I believe they were right

(Testimony of Agnes Regina Kelly.)

about other things that I had not yet attained to make it prove through application, but as time went on what they had told before that they had proved, later I did prove; so when they say now that which I haven't attained a state to prove it, why shouldn't I believe it. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3305.)

I have proved that the law in those books will act if you put it into operation. I haven't ascended, but everything that is in those books has not been attained by everyone yet. I haven't attained the state required for precipitation yet. It is one of my goals. I would like to see the ascended masters. I have not seen them yet. [565]

Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere in their classes stated that they knew that Mr. Ballard had the experiences that were related in "Unveiled Mysteries". He did have the experiences related in "The Magic Presence". Mr. Stickell and Mr. Cassiere gave the instruction from the books as Mr. Ballard gave it. They didn't put their own interpretation on it at all. They gave the instruction from the books Those who have attained to whom it is to be released will be able to precipitate. It is not up to me to say who they are. I have never heard Mr. Ballard say that he could precipitate. I have read the discourse saying that precipitation of gold and jewels from the invisible to the visible is as simple as real when once that foolish questioning doubt accumulated by the outer is consumed or pushed aside. I did not say that I had pushed

(Testimony of Agnes Regina Kelly.)

aside—I did not say that I had the power of precipitation. To precipitate from the universal first of all you have to be fairly unselfish. You have to have reached a state where you will not use anything for destructive purposes. You have to be so purified, your physical body has to be purified. I have never seen anyone precipitate, nor have I been told of anyone.

I have read the discourse concerning the ascended master one day standing before me. He says, "One day", and that day for me has not arrived yet. Whether it was before I die in my physical body, is up to the great ascended masters whether it would be before or after. I didn't always expect to see the ascended masters and that is not the reason I traveled about from place to place. I didn't feel myself that I had attained a pure state that would allow those ascended masters to come to me. It could be that I heard Mrs. Ballard say that there was a strong possibility that at certain meetings if there was certain harmony present, the ascended masters would appear, but it hasn't been attained so far, but it could be. Nothing was ever said at the meetings about buying the books. "The Voice of the I Am" is for sale at [566] the meetings, but you have to go and get it yourself. A good many of the students have copies, yes; most of them. I read Saint Germain's Discourse in Washington, D. C., referring to the Saint Germain series of books as the most condensed information ever given to man-

(Testimony of Agnes Regina Kelly.)

kind. Before that came in the magazine, I obtained the books and read them because of the instructions that were given me and the law that was given, because I believed and put into practice what was in those books and I got benefits from them. Books were being offered for sale at subsequent meetings. The books can be obtained at any meeting. I bought the books before the paper, Government's Exhibit 44, page 5, was made, wherein it states that Saint Germain did not consider it too much effort to read and reread the books, that the volumes which are found there are bound in covers of jewels, but I believe that those books are the most precious possession that I have. I believe the experiences related therein are true. (Tr. Vol. 20, p. 3316.)

I don't recall having heard Mr. Ballard give the dictation in the April 1939 "Voice". If it was in Washington, D. C., I was there because I attended all the classes. There were other things sold in addition to the books, such as animated charts. Some of the students bought them. The fact that in the Master Jesus' Discourse I was told to stand one hundred per cent for the movement, or the I Am Discourses, I suppose made me have additional confidence in them, but I had additional confidence even before that.

I am with the Bureau of Statistics in the Department of Interstate Commerce.

JUROR BATCHELOR:

I am getting all confused. There has been a lot of testimony that certain things would be accomplished upon the attainment of perfection and these people have testified that they have made these books and these articles their law of life, and I would like to know why they haven't attained that [567] perfection, or what they expect to do in order to attain it.

FRANCIS W. DANA

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I live in Portland, Maine. Until 1927 I was employed in the service management of a company which owned and operated 17 large industrial companies, then I went into the banking business in which I engaged until about a year ago when I retired. I am a follower of the I Am activity. I have been since 1935. I first learned of the activity through a letter that my wife received from a friend in New York. I acquired one of the books at a meeting held by the Ballards in Boston. That was the first class I attended and thereafter I attended others. I attended three meetings of the Ballards in Boston, two in Washington, four in Los Angeles during the last three years. I have never heard the Ballards or any one on the platform solicit money or anything of value from anyone during the meeting. I have never heard the Ballards or anyone from the platform urge anyone to buy books or

(Testimony of Francis W. Dana.)

other commercial products, nor did I ever hear anyone make statements concerning the books, other than that they were available for sale. I have heard cataclysms mentioned, but no date was ever set. Participation in the activity has completely changed my outlook on life. I have now a feeling of peace, harmony, happiness and understanding of life such as I have never had before, and to perhaps an unusual degree, it has stimulated my love of America and humanity. In fact, for the first time, I think, in my life I feel anchored in the truth, in the light.

Cross Examination

I loved America before I joined the movement. My understanding of solicitation of money is to ask for it. I have heard Harry Rogers make announcements from the platform, but I am not sure that I heard him refer to love gifts. I have heard announcements that books were obtainable in the lobby. I don't know that [568] I have heard references to love gifts. I have the entire set of books and my wife has one set. I have had occasion to give away a book and bought them. I purchased them mostly through the Saint Germain Press in Los Angeles. I never purchased them at classes. I own charts, pictures and song sheets, which I purchased from the Saint Germain Press. I believed absolutely that the experiences related in the books were true. I have never been a member of the Ballard staff nor in close association with the Ballards and

know nothing of the business dealings of the Ballards.

AUREL DOROTHY EATON,

called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants, testified as follows:

I am employed in the Treasury Department of the United States Government at Washington, D. C. I am a follower of the I Am instruction and have been since 1935, having come in contact with the teachings when Mr. and Mrs. Ballard were in Washington, D. C. I attended the Ballard class in Washington in 1939 and I attended every session of it. Mr. Ballard was on the platform at every session. I heard him make the call with reference to a sword of blue flame. It was a call that he be given the use of the sword of blue flame. Previously we had been given an explanation that the sword of blue flame was the condensation of light rays of blue light, and it was a very powerful activity which could only be used by the ascended masters.

GRACE ADE

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I live in New York and I am advertising manager of the New York Greater Federation of Churches. That consists of every Protestant organi-

(Testimony of Grace Ade.)

zation in the metropolitan area. I am an "I Am" student and have my own little group. I have never, never made any financial reports to the Ballards from the group. I have been in the work since 1935. It has benefited me in that it has given [569] me a better understanding of myself and of mankind, and it has made me more charitable and kinder and considerate of everyone.

Cross Examination

I was charitable, kindly and considerate before going in the movement, but it has made me more so.

DAVID E. SAYRE,

called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants, testified as follows:

I am an electrical-chemical engineer. I reside in Seattle, Washington. I am in business for myself, doing engineering work for other people. I have been so engaged for thirty odd years. I was educated at Proctor Academy in Idaho and the University of Utah in Salt Lake. I studied physics and chemistry. I am a follower of the I Am activity and have been since October 1939. I attended four classes conducted by Mrs. Ballard prior to April 1941. They were held in Los Angeles. I never heard the Ballards or anyone solicit any money or anything of value from anyone at the classes, nor have I heard them make any statements concerning the sale of books other than to say they were available.

(Testimony of David E. Sayre.)

I never heard the Ballards or anyone urge persons to buy books or jewels or charts, phonograph records, radio transcriptions, songs or any other commercial product. I have heard the subject of cataclysms mentioned. I never heard a definite date set for a cataclysm. The instruction given by the Ballards, God, the Mighty I Am Presence, and the Ascended Master Law has cleared away many questions and doubts in my mind that I had previously, and made it much easier in doing the work with other people, and harmonizing. I refer to my work as a consulting engineer.

Cross Examination

I read the books before I joined the movement. I have been to every class since joining in the early part of 1940. I came to the class at my own expense. I believed in the truth of the statements made in the books and the various statements [570] made by Mrs. Ballard from the stand, including those regarding ascension. I never heard any statement made by anyone or by any member of the staff regarding the subject matter of love gifts. I noticed love gift boxes at the Shrine Auditorium. I did contribute love gifts at the classes. Part of the reason for my contribution was the belief in the truth of the statements made by Mrs. Ballard. Another of my reasons for contributing love gifts was my belief in the statements in the books. I have purchased song sheets and phonograph records and I have

(Testimony of David E. Sayre.)

charts of the Saint Germain Press in my home. I obtained them either from the reading rooms or the Saint Germain Press direct. I never bought any at the classes. I bought these things in part because of my belief in the truth of all the statements made by the Ballards either in their publications or from the platform.

Redirect Examination

I had other reasons for making love gifts. I feel that it is necessary for an activity such as this to be supported by the ones attending the classes and should be contributed to by them. Natural expenses of renting the halls and conducting the meetings are incurred, which the students should bear. The love gifts mentioned were given at the Shrine class. I put them in the box prepared for that in the foyer of the Shrine Auditorium. I would not necessarily place the money in a container. I might just drop in some money in change or in an envelope, either way.

Recross Examination

I have never been a member of the Ballard staff. I know nothing of the activities of the Saint Germain Press, except in connection with purchasing supplies in connection with group activity.

EVERETT BOERRIGTER

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I live at Pueblo, Colorado and work with the Surplus [571] Commodities Division, Surplus Marketing Administration of the Federal Government, and have been since 1935. I am a follower of the I Am activity and have been since 1937. My first contact was when the book "Unveiled Mysteries" was given to me to read. Approximately six months later I attended the class. I continued to read the book. During that period I endeavored to apply the principles in a limited manner. As I continued the application of the laws, I built up a better and more complete understanding of them. I became particularly impressed with the laws given forth, because of their practical application, something I could get my hands on and use. My sleep had been quite disturbed for years before that. I settled that one point definitely and quickly. My eyesight was badly impaired. I could not read without glasses and I could not get a driver's license without glasses; and I worked on my eyes, using the laws of life, and they gradually became better. I do not have my glasses on now and have not had for about two years. I had worn glasses for approximately seven years. The first I Am class I attended was held by Mr. and Mrs. Gallagher in the latter part of 1937. I attended a class given by the Ballards in Denver in 1938, another class given by the Ballards

(Testimony of Everett Boerrigter.)

in Denver, and a class by the Ballards at Cleveland, and at Los Angeles.

I attended a class by Mr. Cassiere in 1938, and 10 or 11 of his classes in all. I attended 4 or 5 of Mr. Stickell's classes in 1938 and 1939. I went around with Mr. Cassiere in parts of Colorado and New Mexico. I have been a group leader but I have never been a member of the staff. My work takes me to these various places, except New Mexico. I saw Mr. Cassiere give away books. He gave me several. I neither gave him, nor did he ask me for any money for them. I placed them in the libraries in the various towns in Colorado. At the various meetings in Colorado, there were from four to fifteen persons present. Concerning [572] love gifts in these cities, I remember distinctly that nothing was given at Lamar, Colorado; less than $2 at Trinidad, Colorado; at Springfield a dollar and something; at Eads, Colorado, I didn't see any love gifts; at Raton, New Mexico, $2 or less. I did not hear Mr. Cassiere or anyone on the platform solicit any money from anyone at the meetings. I never heard him or anyone on the platform make any statement concerning the sale of books, other than to announce they were for sale. I never heard him urge anyone to buy books, jewelry, charts, phonograph records, or any product. I never heard the subject of cataclysms mentioned. I heard healing mentioned. It was stated that anyone desiring to effect a healing would have to give direction to and

(Testimony of Everett Boerrigter.)

call to his own God-Presence, the source of his own divinity and through that source receive healing power. The God-Presence referred to is synonymous with the Mighty I Am Presence. I never heard Mr. Cassiere or anyone say they could personally heal people or that the Ballards could personally heal people, nor that any jewels that the Ballards possessed had a particular healing quality. He touched upon the subject of ascension, but it was never said that the entire physical body would ascend. The purified substance of the body would make the ascension. Concerning precipitation, he stated that the ascended masters had the power to precipitate. The call for healing was made to the God-Presence, and if it came it would be from the God-Presence.

It was thereupon stipulated that if the same questions concerning solicitation, cataclysms, healings, ascension and precipitation were asked the witness with reference to the Stickell classes, that his answers would be substantially the same.

The Witness: I have derived other benefits from the activity. In addition to improved eyesight, I have better health; I feel as though I have a greater understanding of life and I am [573] more satisfied as to the ultimate goal of mankind on earth. I used to go around carrying a sack full of pills and bottles and drugs, and that sort of thing. I have thrown them in the creek. I now

(Testimony of Everett Boerrigter.)

hold a driver's license without the necessity of using glasses.

Cross Examination

I am thirty-five years of age. I was under Civil Service when I worked for the Surplus Marketing Administration. I am not at the present time. I was strong enough to take my position with the Government when I went to work and physically able to carry on the work. Mr. Cassiere was two days in Pueblo on his last trip, one evening each at Trinidad, Springfield, Lamar and Eads. He never told me that he wanted to get the books in the library to publicize the movement. They were placed there at my request. So many individuals in those places were desiring to read the books and were happy to read them if they were placed in the libraries at the service of the public. People never bought the books if they were put in the libraries. A book has been sold at our sanctuary in Pueblo. It is not true that Mr. Cassiere told me that all these books were true, both as to experiences, narratives, and statements. Mr. Cassiere did not tell me anything of the kind. (Tr. Vol. 21, p. 3376.) I don't recall any statement of that type by him. He generally spent his time at the meeting explaining and teaching the laws of life and how we could apply them to our own benefits. I testified on direct examination that none of the narratives or laws or principles in the first book appealed to me, and then that later, after six or seven months, I

(Testimony of Everett Boerrigter.)

applied the laws of the first two books in a limited manner. I found that if I applied the proper application, I got satisfactory results. An example of laws that are of the material rather than the nebulous, would be when I make a call to the Mighty I Am Presence to give me a sound night's rest and undisturbed [574] sleep, I would go to bed and sleep like a baby. (Tr. Vol. 21, p. 3377.)

I do not understand the symbols beside the picture of Saint Germain in the Ascended Master Light, Exhibit 8, or "Unveiled Mysteries", Exhibit 89. Proper application of the laws of this movement may bring about precipitation. This law gave me the ability to no longer use my glasses and to sleep well. Precipitation is a matter of degree and when I get a suit of clothes or a shirt, that is one phase of precipitation, that is a crude manner of precipitating things. This law is very practical. Referring to the I Am Discourses, Government's Exhibit 5, to the effect that precipitating gold and jewels from the invisible to the visible is as simple as breathing when once that foolish questioning doubt accumulated by the outer is consumed or pushed aside, there must be a litle doubt in my system, perhaps a little, or I wouldn't be still limited to certain things. I have many things to do before I can precipitate money and I haven't given that a great deal of thought. (Tr. Vol. 21, p. 3391.) I would have to graduate as in school, going step by step before you go along. It is highly possible

(Testimony of Everett Boerrigter.)

that I could precipitate. I have never been able to precipitate a banquet, as I have read about in the "Magic Presence". The ascended masters can precipitate quite readily. Jesus, for One, precipitated before He made the ascension. He was a Master but before He made ascension, He could precipitate, according to record.

Redirect Examination

We were taught in the activity what is said in Exhibit 47, at page 11, as follows:

> "Therefore, I say to you that your Presence of Life, the 'Mighty I AM' is the Greatest Banker in this Universe and holds forever the continuous supply you require; not of so much coined money, but the Governing Intelligence which enables you to harmonize with the conditions in the human octave that will bring the release of your [575] supply through natural channels.
>
> "In using that term or giving you further explanation of it—you call these outer channels 'natural channels.' That is why I used the expression, but after all the natural channel of all supply is your Presence of Life."

The ultimate source of all things was God, the Mighty I Am Presence.

GATHERINE SLINGLUFF

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I am employed by the Aetna Insurance Company at Chicago. I came in contact with the I Am instruction in 1937. I came in contact with it through a friend. I attended a class at Oak Park, Illinois conducted by Mr. Stickell. I am acquainted with Mrs. Bliss of Chicago. I have attended classes conducted by her. I was under her instruction all the time she was in the work from three to four days every week from 1936 to 1939. She stated that she was an appointed messenger. I have never heard her state that the entire physical body was to take off from the earth upon an ascension. I have attended classes conducted by the Ballards. I have heard the subject matter of ascension mentioned by them. Their instruction was that the finer part of the body would ascend into the higher mental body, from the higher mental body into the Mighty I Am Presence, the purified substance.

Mrs. Bliss stated at the classes conducted by her that the finer part or purified substance of the physical body would ascend.

Cross Examination

I purchased books of the Saint Germain Press from the book store and from the different classes and our reading rooms. I became interested in the movement prior to the time I purchased books. I read the magazines and ascension was taught in the

(Testimony of Katherine Slingluff.)

magazines as well as the books. I recall the old and the new [576] dispensation. The difference between the new and the old dispensation is that in the new dispensation, the residue or the remaining part of the physical body is consumed through cremation. Under the old dispensation, it was consumed through the light rays, in which event it is absorbed back into the elements (Tr. Vol. 21, p. 4307.) The witness was shown a magazine and asked to read a passage, to which she replied, "May I put on my glasses?"

Mr. Lazarus read from Exhibit 13, pages 12 to 14, the May 1936 issue of "The Voice" magazine.

The Witness: I have heard it taught in classes that at the moment of ascension the gravity pull of the earth can no longer affect the body and the body ~~rises~~ into the atmosphere and goes wherever it wishes. Under the new dispensation the portion of the body which has not been purified sufficiently would remain behind and be consumed through cremation. Mrs. Bliss stated that she was appointed directly by Saint Germain through Mr. and Mrs. Ballard. In other words, Saint Germain told the Ballards to appoint Muriel Bliss his messenger.

I have attended classes in Cleveland and Detroit and Washington, as well as Chicago. I have contributed love gifts and purchased books. I believe that everything in the books is true. I believe everything in "The Voice" magazine that is dictated by the ascended masters is so done. Anything

(Testimony of Katherine Slingluff.)

there that has Mr. or Mrs. Ballard's signature was given no doubt through Saint Germain's instruction. I believe the statement in the magazine that it is an outlet of the help from the ascended masters. It has no human concepts in it. I bought the books and magazines because I accept the law that they present. It is the law of life and that is what I take out of it. I believe the magazine has no human concepts in it.

Redirect Examination

My love gifts were absolutely voluntary. No one asked me to give them. [577]

Recross Examination

I have heard reference to love gifts from the platform.

NIELSINE KILDAH

was called as a witness in behalf of the Defendants and testified as follows:

I live at Mason, North Dakota. I taught first at the State University of North Dakota, and then I did research work at the University of Chicago and assisted in research work in the University of Minnesota. My educational background has been along the lines of biology, principally in botany. I graduated from the University of North Dakota. I have a B.A. and M.A. and Ph.D. from the University of Chicago.

(Testimony of Nielsine Kildah.)

I am a student of the I Am activity and have been since 1936. My first connection with it was when I went to a class conducted by Mr. Cassiere in Minneapolis. I am a member of Sigma Psi, an international honorary society membership in which is given in recognition of research done in any field of science. I have attended every session of a class in Washington, D. C. in 1939. I did not miss a session. I saw Mr. Ballard on the platform during each and every one of the sessions. I saw him come to and leave the platform. He was walking without assistance. I have never heard a date of a cataclysm mentioned at any Ballard class. I have never heard money solicited by them or anyone on the platform. I have never heard any statements concerning books other than to announce them, nor the purchase of any other articles solicited. The statements concerning healing were that the Mighty I Am Presence is the only healing power in the universe. If we conform with the law of life and meet the requirements and then call to the Mighty I Am Presence, it will charge us with its healing rays and healing will take place. Mrs. Ballard never stated at any class I attended that the Bible was a filthy book. I have heard her make reference to the Bible, sometimes quoting the sayings of Jesus and others. I don't recall her ever making any statement regarding the Old [578] Testament. I heard Mr. Ballard make a statement from the platform in November 1939 with reference

(Testimony of Nielsine Kildah.)

to a sword of blue flame. He called for the sword of blue flame in his hands. I had heard it previously referred to. It is a focus of the blue light ray. It was to be used to purify any discordant condition. It is used by the ascended masters. I have noticed benefits from the activity. It gave me a working principle by which to guide my life, and I found that upon applying that principle it brought a great many—it changed my life a great deal, made it much easier for me, brought a great many blessings into my life. I am 74 years old.

Cross Examination

I am sure Mr. Ballard got the sword of blue flame. It is not visible to the physical eye. It is too high a vibration. He didn't say that he had received the sword. That is my conclusion. The sword is used by the ascended masters and Mr. Ballard was not an ascended master at that time. We can call to the Mighty I Am Presence and the ascended masters to use the sword of blue flame. I have called for it to be used.